



A 1 2 3 4 5 6 M 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 B 17 18 19



洋学文庫  
文庫 8  
C 1231



NIEUWE LEERWIJZE

DER

ENGELSCHETAAL

DOOR

E. GERDES.

Tweede Cursus.

AMSTERDAM,  
P. N. VAN KAMPEN.  
1856.



65- 1071



V O O R R E D E.

*Bij de uitgave van dezen tweeden en laatsten cursus mijner Nieuwe Leerwijze der Engelsche taal, verwijs ik den Onderwijzer naar de Voorrede van het eerste deel. Ik heb getracht dezen cursus nog veel uitvoeriger en meer opklimmend te bewerken dan het tweede deel van mijnen Franschen cursus, en tevens met vrucht gebruik gemaakt van den „Practischen Lehrgang zur schnellen und leichten Erlernung der Englischen Sprache von G. van den Berg.“ Even als in mijne Fransche Leerwijze (2<sup>den</sup> cursus), heb ik in de derde Afdeeling weder eenige vertellingen geplaatst, welke, nadat ze gelezen en vertaald zijn, schriftelijk beantwoord moeten worden. De vierde Afdeeling behelst eenige lees oefeningen, waarbij eenige gemakkelijke gedichtjes gevoegd zijn. Ik geloof*

dat de opklimming niet moeilijk zijn zal, en dat de verhalen uitermate geschikt zijn tot wedervertelling. De vijfde Afdeeling bevat eenige noodige spreekwijzen en gemakkelijke gesprekken, die zoo ongaarne in een leerboek gemist worden. Ook heb ik eene tamelijk uitvoerige woordenlijst achter dit deel geplaatst, welke, zoo ik hoop, aan het doel moge beantwoorden.

Het zal mij aangenaam zijn, indien ook dit werk een even gunstig onthaal vindt als mijne overige Leerboeken.

E. GERDES.

Amsterdam,  
28 April 1856.

D R U K F E I L E N.

Blz. 112 reg. 16 v. o. staat *attented*, lees: *attended*.  
» 118 » 11 v. b. » *hnmble*, » *humble*.

Eerste Afdeeling.

(De woorden voor deze opstellen vindt men aan het einde van dit Werkje.)

1.

<i>From the garden,</i>	van den tuin.
<i>in the garden,</i>	in den tuin.
<i>at church,</i>	in, of naar de kerk.
<i>to school,</i>	naar, of in school.

Where have you been, my children? We have been at school and at church. Is the coachman in the stable? Is the maid in the cellar? My mother is gone to market, and my father to the post-office. To-night we shall go to the ball. My brothers will go to the concert but not to the play. My cousins are since six months in the country (buiten); they will still remain there a fortnight. Where have you put the napkins? I believe that I have put them into the drawer. That man goes every day to the ale-house. To day we have been at the exchange. Where do you come from? We come from a walk. My aunt comes from church, and my uncle comes from the townhall. Is that your brother whom I see in the garden? I beg your pardon, it is our neighbour's son.

II.

1

## 2.

Waar is uw broeder? Ik geloof dat hij in den tuin of in de keuken is. Zijt gij heden naar school geweest? Mijne zuster is sedert drie dagen buiten; zij is niet wel. Waar gaat gij heen? Ik ga met mijnen broeder naar de kerk. Wij zullen ook naar de beurs gaan. Breng dezen brief naar het postkantoor, voordat gij naar het concert gaat. Waar hebt gij mijn pennemes gelegd? Ik heb het in de lade gelegd. Van waar komen deze knapen? Ik geloof dat zij uit het woud komen. Wanneer Karel uit school komt, zend hem dan naar het stadhuis; de Burgemeester zal hem een boek voor mij geven.

## 3.

<i>To be hungry,</i>	hongerig zijn.	<i>to be right,</i>	gelijk hebben.
<i>to be thirsty,</i>	dorstig zijn.	<i>to be wrong,</i>	ongelijk hebben.
<i>to be sleepy,</i>	slaperig zijn.	<i>to want,</i>	noodig hebben.
<i>to have a mind,</i>	lust hebben.	<i>to take pity on,</i>	medelijden hebben met.

I am hungry. I am very hungry. I have a good appetite. Give me something to eat, if you please. What do you wish to have? Will you have some ham or cheese? I beg you to give me some soup and roast beef. Are you not thirsty? I am very thirsty. Here is wine and beer, take what you like. I am infinitely obliged to you. Now I have had enough. Now I will lie down to sleep, I am sleepy. Why do you want to go to bed so soon? I did not sleep last night, I want to rest. What do you say? You have slept soundly. I beg your pardon, I did not close my eyes all night. I was very cold, there was no fire in my room. You are mistaken, there was a very good fire. I was so warm, that I was obliged to get up, and to open a window. I may be in the wrong. Let us take a walk. With all my heart.

## 4.

Zijt gij hongerig, Karel? Een weinig, lieve moeder. Ik zal u een boterham geven. Ik heb wel lust uit te gaan, doch ik zal liever te huis blijven, dewijl het regent. Mijn broeder is altijd slaperig. Waarom slaapt hij niet? Hij was vroeger nooit slaperig; ik geloof dat hij ongesteld is. De zoon van den timmerman heeft geld noodig; hij wil morgen hout koopen. Mijne zuster heeft gelijk; zij vertelde mij gisteren, dat de tuinman de appelen heeft verkocht. Uwe zuster heeft ongelijk, want ik heb de appelen bij den tuinman gezien. Ik heb medelijden met uwen jongsten broeder, want hij heeft al zijne boeken verloren. Ik ben dorstig, geef mij een glas water of bier.

## 5.

<i>To be ashamed,</i>	zich schamen.	<i>to be afraid,</i>	bang zijn.
<i>to be used,</i>	gewoon zijn.	<i>to have patience,</i>	geduld hebben.

Are you still in bed? Are you not ashamed of sleeping so long? I should be ashamed to get up so late. I cannot get up to-day, I have a pain in my head and in my breast. You are a lazy little fellow. When you are to go to school, you have always something the matter with you. You are used to go to bed early and to get up late. That is a bad habit. I beg you to have a moment's patience; I am going to get up. I have no mind to wait any longer. I am afraid to arrive at church too late. You are very hard-hearted, you take no pity on a poor sick person. You are not sick, you do not like to go to school, you do not like to study. You are right, my friend, I will endeavour to mend my manners, and to follow your advice.

Hendrik! hebt gij lust eene wandeling met mij te doen? Ik heb geen lust, nu uit te gaan. Ik ben slaperig. Schaamt gij u niet, zoo lui te zijn? Kom, wij zullen in den tuin mijns ooms gaan. Hoe laat is het? Het is pas zes uur; de zon schijnt nog. Gij hebt gelijk, het is nog vroeg, ik wil met u gaan. Ik ben gewoon elken avond eene wandeling te doen, voordat ik te bed ga. Dat is eene goede gewoonte. Ik ben zeer warm, wij gaan te schielijk. Ik ben zeer dorstig; ik zoude gaarne een glas water drinken. Ik heb noodig een weinig te rusten; ik ben zoo vermoeid, dat ik niet verder kan gaan. Gij moet een oogenblik wachten. Kom, ik vrees te laat naar huis te komen.

*as.... as,*            *zoo.... als.*  
*just as.... as,*    *even zoo.... als.*  
*not so.... as,*     *niet zoo.... als.*

Is your brother as tall as I? He is not so tall as you. Has he (got) as many books as I? He has not got so many books as you. Your uncle's house is just as spacious as ours. This garden is very large, but it is not so beautiful as yours. This young man has as fine books as you. I like him as much as you do. You do not like me so much as I like you. This china is as white as alabaster. The lion is not so cruel as the tiger. Africa is not so populous as Europe. Henriët and Louisa are not so lazy as Charlotte and Emily. Your cousin was so busy as not to see me. He is not so happy as he seems to be. Your sister is so flirtly as to have already forgotten the punishment. My son does not work so much as you do. You have not worked so long as I have. Bad examples are as prejudicial to the health of the soul as the contagious air is to

the health of the body. The ass is as patient and quiet as the horse is proud and fiery.

You are taller than my brother, but you are less discreet than he. Your physician is more fortunate but less clever than ours. That young gentleman is very diligent, he has written more than six exercises to-day. That gentleman is very rich, he has more than thirty houses. Our gardener has many children; I believe he has more than twelve. You have a great deal of business; my son has more business than you, but my cousin has the most. You have little pleasure; I have still less than you; and our cousin has the least. This workman asks no less than six dollars a week. This war has cost our government more than fifty millions of florins. The troops made no less than thirty miles a day. The child has slept more than two hours. Your brothers have been very diligent to-day; they have made three exercises more.

Gij zijt grooter dan ik, maar mijn broeder is niet zoo groot als ik. Mijn oom is juist zoo rijk als uw vader. Wij hebben even zoo vele boeken als gij, maar wij hebben niet zoo vele platen en landkaarten. Mijn zoon, gij zijt zoo vlijtig geweest, dat gij eene belooning verdient. Ik heb niet zoo veel betaald, als gij gelooft. Ik ben daarover even zoo verblijd, als gij. Uwe zuster heeft even zulke schoone kleederen als de mijne. Mijne zonen werken niet zoo veel als de uwen; zij zijn niet zoo werkzaam als gij. De Heer N. heeft meer kinderen dan zijn broeder; ik geloof dat hij er meer dan negen heeft. Uwe zuster heeft minder vriendinnen dan de mijne, omdat zij veel trotscher is. Wij

zijn heden veel vlijtiger geweest dan gisteren; wij hebben twee opstellen meer gemaakt. Ik heb veel geduld, maar gij niet minder. Hendrik heeft heden meer dan tien brieven afgeschreven. Gij kunt hem niet minder dan twee gulden geven.

## 10.

*A good one*, een, eene goede; *good ones*, goede, goeden.

These pens are so soft, that it is impossible to split them. You must always buy good pens, never bad ones. My eyes are so weak, that I cannot distinguish the letters. Then you must buy a pair of spectacles. I cannot find any good ones. This young man is just as diligent as his brother is careless. The horse of your aunt is very dear; she never buys cheap ones. The more money you have, the more friends you will have. There are three books in my desk, a german one and two french ones. The finer the cloth is, the better it is. The softer the pens are, the worse they are. This ink is very bad, give me some better. You always give me bad apples, you must give me the best. The more you beg him, the less he will do it. Give your sister two pears and your brother three. The less money he has, the more saving he is.

## 11.

Hoe vele lammeren hebt gij gezien? Ik heb drie kleine lammeren gezien en een groot. Ik weet niet, wat u deert, lieve Caroline; hoe meer men hier lacht, des te meer weent gij; hoe meer wij u aanmoedigen vrolijk te zijn, des te treuriger zijt gij. Ik sla u reeds een kwartier gade, doch hoe meer ik u aanzie, des te minder begrijp ik waarom gij bedroefd zijt. — Mijne vrienden hebben hunne witte paarden verkocht, en zwarte gekocht. Ik heb

een gehoorzaam kind, en mijn broeder heeft ongehoorzame (kinderen). Hoe minder men wenscht, des te tevredener is men. Ik had zes pennen en mijn broeder had (er) negen. Dit linnen is te grof, ik heb fijner noodig. Gij zijt nooit tevreden, mijn kind; hoe meer gij hebt, des te meer wenscht gij te hebben. Hoe ouder men is, des te verstandiger men moet zijn. Hij gaf zijnen broeder de leelijkste prenten en mij de mooisten.

## 12.

*Who?* wie? *whom*, wien; *what?* wat?

Who is that man? He is a teacher and a very good one. His friend is a french officer. Who is that lady? She is a milliner. Who are those ladies. They are Mrs. N.'s sisters. Who are those gentlemen? They are merchants. Whom do you speak of? From whom have you received this beautiful dog? Whom do you write to? I write to one of my friends. Whom have you spoken to? I have spoken to the footman. Who has done that? My son? No, your gardener's son has done it. Who asks for me? Is it you? No, it is not I. To whom have you given my walking-stick? For whom do you work? What have you seen? Whom did you find there? What are you writing? What has he answered you? What have you taken? What has the physician prescribed for you? Whom has your brother offended? Whom have you beaten? What do you want?

## 13

Wie komt daar? Wie gaat daar? Wien zie ik? Wat schrijft gij? Wie is de vriend van den koopman? Wie is de zuster van den advokaat? Wie zijn deze scholieren? Het zijn de jongste broeders van den Heer D. Van wien

spreekt gij met uwe kleine nicht? Aan wien schrijft gij? Schrijft gij aan de vrouw van den kleermaker? Wie heeft deze appelen geplukt? Ik geloof dat uw zoon het gedaan heeft. Neen, de zoon van den tuinman heeft gisteren de appelen geplukt. Wie vraagt naar mij? Zijt gij het, of is het uw neef? Aan wien hebt gij mijnen inktkoker en de drie pennen gegeven? Wat hebt gij dezen morgen geschreven? Wien zaagt gij gisteren avond in de kerk? Gij vraagt te veel, mijn vriend. Wat hebt gij hem geantwoord? Wat ontbreekt u nog? Goede boeken en goede vrienden. Ik heb wel groote potlooden, maar geene goede.

14.

*Which, welke?*

What books do you read? What fruit do you like best? Of what houses do you speak? What is your intention? What o'clock is it? Which of these gardens do you like best? Which of these ladies is your sister? Which of these gentlemen speak french? Which of your sisters are sick? My brother is travelling. Which of your brothers? My sister is arrived. Which of your sisters? I have given your book to one of my daughters. To which? I have received this present from one of my friends. From which? Which of those gentlemen have you spoken to? To which of those ladies will you show your engravings?

15.

Wat doet gij daar? Wij teekenen. Wat teekent gij? Bloemen. Welke is uwe teekening, Karel? Hier is zij. Dat hebt gij goed gedaan. Waar is Louise? Zij is in den tuin. Wat doet zij daar? Ik weet het niet. Wie heeft (het) haar veroorloofd in den tuin te gaan? Weet zij niet, dat de teekenmeester zal komen? Wat zoude hij

zeggen, indien hij haar niet in de kamer vond? Wat wilt gij met deze geldstukken doen? Ik wil ze aan de armen geven. Wie is in mijne kamer geweest? Wien hebt gij het gezegd? Van wien hebt gij het vernomen? Door welke steden zijt gij gekomen? In welk gevecht is uw broeder gewond geworden? Van welk gevecht spreekt gij? Met welke dezer dames wilt gij wandelen? Aan wien denkt gij? Waarvan (van wat) spreekt gij? Wien heeft hij gegroet? Wie van uwe broeders is heden aangekomen? Wien hebt gij beschuldigd? Welke van uwe zusters is ziek? Met welken van deze heeren zijt gij in Parijs geweest? Wien heeft zij beloond? Aan welke van deze meiden hebt gij den brief gegeven?

16.

*Who, that, which, welke, welken, welk; whose, of which, wiens, wier.*

That is a young man who writes very well. That is a young lady who speaks french with great ease. I like to converse with men that have travelled much. That is the physician (whom)\*, I have seen, the young lady (whom) you know. Those are the books (which)\* you are looking for, the flowers (which) you like. Where is the letter (which) you are speaking of? Have you seen the persons (that) he speaks so much good of? That is a man whose probity I know. I do not know what you want. She does not know what she is saying. They do not know what they are about. That is the bridge over which we have passed, the house which he has entered. That is what I am complaining of. That is what I am frequently thinking of. That is the book the leaves of which you have torn out.

1\*\*



17.

Hier is de jongeling, die het kind van onzen buurman heeft gered. Het huis, dat gij in de verte ziet, heeft mijne tante gekocht. De kamers, welke ik bewoon, zijn zeer ruim. Kent gij de dame, van welke wij spreken? Waar is de arme schoenmaker, dien gij een glas wijn hebt gegeven? De bediende, wien ik mijne beurs had toevertrouwd, is weggelopen. Hebt gij het kind gezien, wiens vader zoo ziek is? De jonge officier, wiens dapperheid zoo zeer geroemd wordt, is de schoonzoon van mijnen buurman. De wijnverkooper, dien gij kent, en wiens wijnen zoo voortreffelijk zijn, heeft mij vijftig flesschen rooden wijn gezonden. De officier, met wien ik aankwam, is reeds vertrokken. De linten, welke gij mij gezonden hebt, bevallen mij. De dagen, welke ik bij u doorbragt, waren mij zeer aangenaam. Daar is de boom, waaronder wij zoo dikwijls uitrustten, en welks bladeren reeds afvallen. Dat is eene familie, aan welke wij veel verplicht zijn. Dat zijn dingen, wier waarde ik niet ken. Hier is het mes, waarvan Karel de punt heeft afgebroken.

18

<i>He who,</i>	hij, die (wie).
<i>she who,</i>	zij, die (enkelv.)
<i>they who, those who,</i>	zij, die (meerv.)

What you tell me pleases me. Tell me what you like best. He who gave you the books will not be satisfied with your answer. Tell me what he told you. I do not know what happened to him. She whom you saw was my niece. She to whom you addressed my letter, had not yet left town. I thought of him whom you met on your return from Paris. They who are afraid of every

thing show but little courage. What I have written to her is the truth. I prefer that which you have bought. They say that he did not know what he said. Tell me what he has done. Give it to those who want it most. Did you see him who gave you the beautiful dog? Do you like her who has educated you?

19.

Geef mij wat gij wilt. Wie u beminde, konde u niet verlaten. Dat is het, wat ik u altijd gezegd heb. Kent gij haar, die bij mijne zuster was? Hoe vindt gij datgene, dat uw oom u gezonden heeft? Beleedigd gij dengene, die voor uwe broeders zorgde? Meent gij degene, die gij hoondet? Wij spreken van degene, die Londen nog niet had gezien. Zeg het hem, die het gezien heeft. Datgene, wat ik u gestuurd heb, is het goedkoopste. Wat hij van mij verlangt, is niet verstandig. Datgene, wat gij voor mij verborgen hieldt, was het niet wat ik wenschte te zien. Zij, die mij kennen, weten, dat ik mijne broeders liefheb.

20.

\**Some, any, eenig, eenige, iemand.* { *every, each,* } ieder, iedereen.  
*some body, any body, iemand.* { *every one,* }

Did you see any one in the garden? My uncle has given me some money. Lend me some pens. I have seen some scholars. Has any body called for me? I speak of somebody whom you know. Some one of my friends has spoken to me about you. Some of our friends will come to-night. I will make use of some of your books. Here is something fine. We are speaking of something that interests you. Every situation has its agreements. Every citizen must serve his country. Every one must do his duty.

The master has spoken to each of his scholars. Put these books each in its place. I have read each of these books. She knows each of my daughters. Can you lend me any of your clothes?

## 21.

*Nobody*, niemand; *nothing*, niets; *something*, *any thing*, iets;  
*no*, *none*, geen, geene, niemand.

I have nothing to do. Nothing pleases me. I know nothing of all that. Did you ever see any thing finer? Is there any thing more amiable than virtue? Nobody knows it. I do not know any body here. Do not say any thing about it to any body. I will not tell it to any body. Has nobody asked for me? None of you can draw. Nobody knows whether he will live to-morrow. These reproaches do not make impression of him. I have taken none of those books. None of my friends will come. Did you find any thing reasonable? Has he told you any thing encouraging? Is there any one among you who can complain of me? Have you seen any of those ladies? I have seen none. I have spoken to none of those gentlemen.

## 22.

Ieder geruisch verschrikt hem. Iedere leeftijd heeft zijne pligten. Iedereen heeft zijnen plicht gedaan. Hij blijft bij ieder huis staan. Ieder van deze huizen kost zesduizend gulden. Hij heeft aan ieder onzer een geschenk gegeven. Iedereen heeft zijne fouten. Elk boek heeft zijne goede zijde. Wij moeten elken dag goed besteden. Kent gij eenige van deze dames? Ik ken wel eenige van deze heeren, maar ik ken geene van deze dames. Eet eenige peren. Daar zijn schoone appelen; geeft gij (er) mij eeni-

gen. Iemand heeft mij gezegd, dat gij morgen zoudt vertrekken. Men moet van niemand kwaad spreken. Ik kan het u niet geven, want ik heb het aan iemand beloofd. Wij spreken van iemand, dien gij kent. Niemand mijner vrienden is aangekomen. Ik heb geen van mijne boeken verloren. Ik heb het aan niemand dezer heeren gezegd. Niemand weet, dat gij hier zijt. Wij hebben het aan niemand getoond.

## 23.

*All*, alles, alle, geheel; *many a one*, menigeen; *the same*, dezelfde, hetzelfde, even, zelfs.

All is lost. All the world will tell you so. All the country is laid under water. All the family is in the country. Every body is subject to error. All men are mortal. All my friends are arrived. I will serve you on every occasion. I see you every day. He vexes me every moment. I have seem him myself. Even the king has spoken of it. It is the same man, the same woman. They are the same children. You are always the same. I have bought of the same cloth, of the same linnen. My sisters will come themselves. We ourselves have seen them. Mr. N. has written this letter himself. My brother has said it to yourself. I myself will give it thee. One must not always speak of one's self. Many a one speaks of it who knows nothing of it. Many a one sows that does not reap. I have never seen such a man as you are, such a woman as your wife is. I don't like such books, such pens.

## 24.

Al deze meubelen zijn zeer schoon. Al onze dames hebben gezongen. Al die kinderen hadden gewandeld. De geheele tuin is fraai. Wij hadden den geheelen dag gewerkt.

De Heer N. is de weldoener van alle ongelukkigen. Wij hebben het aan al onze vrienden medegedeeld. Al onze bloedverwanten zijn vertrokken. Ik heb het aan al mijne vrienden geschreven. Al degenen, die hier waren, hebben het gehoord. Het is dezelfde heer, dien wij gisteren zagen. Het is altijd hetzelfde antwoord. Ik had dezelfde gedachte. Geef mij van denzelfden wijn. Wij hebben het aan denzelfden koopman gezonden. Ik heb het aan dezelfde vrouw gezegd. Hij heeft zich tot denzelfden advokaat gewend. Ik zal aan denzelfden persoon schrijven. Ik ben er zelf geweest. Gij hebt het zelf gemaakt. Hij zelf zal het u brengen. Wij hebben de boodschap zelve gedaan. Zeg het hem zelf.

## 25.

*Certain*, zeker, gewis; *several*, verscheidene; *both*, beide; *one another*, *each other*, de ander, elkander; *the one*, de een; *the other*, de ander.

Nothing is more certain. A certain gentleman, a certain lady has informed me of it. I have given your book to a certain scholar. Certain boys, certain girls have been here. You speak of a certain merchant whom I know very well. He has promised it me on certain conditions. The thing is not yet certain. Several of my friends know it. To-day I have received several letters. The entrance was refused to several persons. Speak to me about other things. Give me another coat. The one says this, the other that. Have you got no other ink, no other pens? These two brothers love each other. They are both diligent. Men must love one another. I mistook the one for the other. Neither the one nor the other has spoken of it. Do not envy an other's good fortune. Never do to others what you would not have them do to you.

## 26.

*Whoever*, *whosoever*, hij, die, al wie; ieder, die; *whatever*, *whatsoever*, hoe ook, wat ook, hoe ook genaamd, alles wat; *however*, hoe ook.

Whoever is rich must be beneficent. I will give this book to whomsoever will take it. I have no good opinion of whomsoever speaks bad of his friends. Lend me any book. Whatsoever he may have shown you. Whosoever you may be, you will obtain nothing. Whatever you may say, nobody will listen. Whoever may have told you so, you have been imposed upon. I have not spoken to whomsoever it may be. I don't know him, whatever he may say. Whatever place it may be, he will accept of it. Whatever may be his intention, I will not insist him. However rich you may be, there are still richer men than you. Whatever pains you may take, still you will not succeed. In whatever manner you may set about it, every thing will be useless.

## 27.

Hij geeft den eenen, wat hij den anderen ontnemt. Beide hebben ongelijk. Hij heeft aan beiden verwijtingen gedaan, maar zij waren onverdiend. Ik heb van beiden afscheid genomen. Deze broeders beminnen elkander zeer; zij gaan nooit zonder elkander uit. Zij schijnen voor elkander geboren te zijn. Geef mij een anderen hoed en een anderen stok. Benijd nimmer het geluk van anderen. Het is zeldzaam verscheidene vrienden te hebben. Ik zou u eene pen leenen, indien ik (er) verscheidene had. Ik heb het reeds van verscheidene lieden gehoord. Wij hebben verscheidene dagen in deze stad doorgebracht. Wie werkzaam is, is ook gelukkig. Ik zeg het aan ieder, die het hooren wil. Wij zullen ons tegen iedereen verdedigen, die

ons zal aangrijpen. Geef mij een opstel hoe ook genaamd, om het te vertalen. Hoe geleerd gij ook moogt zijn, toch zijn er nog vele dingen, die gij niet weet. Wat hij ook mag zeggen, ik wil niets van hem hooren.

## 28.

*To wash one's self*, zich wasschen; *to amuse one's self*, zich vermaken.

Wash yourself. You have not yet washed yourself. I washed myself an hour ago. I wash myself every morning. My sister does not like to wash herself. We wash ourselves with rain-water. If I had some water, I should have washed myself. What is the use of washing one's self so frequently? She has no mind to wash herself. Will you not wash yourselves? Your father has already washed himself, but your sisters have not yet washed themselves. How do you amuse yourself? I amuse myself very well. I also amuse myself. We amuse ourselves every evening. Amuse yourselves, my friends. I have not yet amused myself to-day. I can no longer amuse myself. You would have amused yourself, if you had been with us. We have amused ourselves very well. My brothers are in the country; they will amuse themselves there.

## 29.

Ik heb mij zoo spoedig mogelijk aangekleed. Ik zal mij nu aankleeden. Zult gij u niet verdedigen? Gij hebt u nog niet gewasschen. Ik vermaak mij, terwijl ik in uw gezelschap ben. Ik weet niet, waar ik mij kan wasschen. Hendrik heeft ons den voorslag gedaan, dezen namiddag naar N. te gaan. Wij zullen ons aldaar zeer vermaken. Men is gelukkig, indien men zich vermaken kan, en indien men gezond is. Roem u zelve niet, eigen roem is hatelijk. Mijn broeder vermaakt zich, hij is zeer bescheiden.

Ik geloof dat hij zich vermaakt heeft. Mijne zuster heeft zich verraden, omdat zij geloofde, dat hare moeder haar gezien had. Kam u. Deze scholier zal zich verraden. Gij hebt u aan een groot gevaar blootgesteld. Ik zoude mij niet getroost hebben, indien ik mijnen vriend had verloren. Wij zouden ons verborgen hebben, indien wij u gezien hadden. Verberg u niet. Verbergt u niet, mijne vrienden.

## 30.

*To rain*, regenen; *to snow*, sneeuwen; *to freeze*, vriezen; *to hail*, hagelen; *to thunder*, donderen; *to lighten*, bliksemen.

It is going to rain. It is already raining. Does it rain? It does not rain. It was raining, when I came. It has rained several times. It is sure to rain. It would rain, if the wind were not so high. I wish it may rain. It believe it snows. Does it snow? Now it does not snow. Has it not snowed? Yes, it has been snowing all the day. If it snowed, it would not rain. It would snow, if it were not so cold. I wish it may snow. It already begins to freeze. It freezes very hard. It has still frozen this morning. It would freeze still harder, if the wind were north. Look, how it hails and lightens at the same time. May it hail or not, I must go out. Has it thundered and lightened? It will soon thunder. It is thundering, I hear it. It is thundering no more, it only lightens. It would thunder, if it were warmer.

## 31.

*To sit*, zitten; *to sit down*, gaan zitten; *to be silent*, zwijgen.

I am sitting here, but I am not well seated. Am I not sitting on my place? Sit down here, this is a better place. Where does your sister commonly sit? She com-

monly sits near the window. Why do you sit near the stove; is not that too warm? Let us sit down, I am fatigued. Will you not sit down, Miss? I would willingly sit down, if my brother were not waiting for me. Pray be seated. Be silent. My aunt cannot be silent. I like better to be silent than to speak bad french. We are silent, when every one talks. They want me to be silent. Why should I be silent? I have been silent too long. Why have you been silent? Be silent, chatterbox. A fool cannot be silent. I should have done better to be silent. I will sit down near you.

## 32.

Ga zitten, mijn kind. Ik ben niet vermoeid; ik ga zelden zitten. Gaat zitten, ik wil ook gaan zitten. Ik ging op eenen steen zitten, om mijnen broeder te verwachten. Ga niet op dien stoel zitten, hij is gebroken. Wij zullen op deze bank gaan zitten. Ik ging onder den boom zitten. Uw broeder zat achter mij. Ik wil niet gaan zitten, ik ben niet vermoeid. Waarom zit gij niet? Ik kan niet langer zitten. Waar is uw broeder? Hij zit voor (at) de deur. Mijne zusters zitten dikwijls in den tuin. Ik zit niet gaarne in de schaduw. Waarom zwijgt gij? Ik kan niet zwijgen, indien ik iets zie, dat mij mishaaft. Een jongeling moet altijd zwijgen, indien oudere lieden met elkander spreken. Op een anderen tijd zal ik zwijgen, indien gij mij vraagt. Hij zou niet zwijgen, indien hij niet vreesde, u te mishagen. Zwijgt, ik wil er niets meer van hooren.

## 33.

*It is*, het is; *there is*, er is; *there are*, er zijn.

It is a year since I have not seen you. It is an hour since I am back. There is somebody whom I do not

know. It is three hours from here to Harlem. There is somebody that asks for you. There is wine enough in the cellar. There are thieves in town. There are many people who say so. It is a very fine house. There are a hundred; there are more than a thousand. There is no one at home. Is there any body? It is a grammar or a dictionary? Is it long since you are learning english? Is there still any wine in the bottle? Is it seven o' clock. Is it far from here to Brussels? It is but twenty miles. You were at the concert; were there many people? There were but thirty persons. There is but one kitchen in the whole house. I should have gone to the play, if there had not been so many people. To-morrow there will be a great concert.

## 34.

Hoe ver is het van hier naar Leiden? Het is ongeveer twaalf uren. Er zijn vele Engelschen in Frankrijk. Is het ver van hier naar N? Neen het is slechts een half uur. Er is iemand, die naar u vraagt. Er is geen olie meer in huis. Er waren weinig lieden bij mijne tante. Er is slechts één paard in den stal. De Heer N. is niet gekomen; dat is jammer. Indien het schooner weder ware, zou hij zekerlijk hier geweest zijn. Misschien zal hij nog komen; dat zou een groot genoeg voor ons zijn. Is dat een pennemes? Is het reeds laat? Zullen (er) vele vrienden in uw huis zijn? Er zullen slechts zes personen zijn. Zal er dit jaar veel wijn zijn? Er zal zeer weinig zijn, dewijl de zomer te koud is; maar er zullen veel vruchten zijn. Het heeft dezen nacht zeer gewaaid. Het is beter te werken dan te spelen. Is het beter te spelen, dan in het geheel niets te doen?

## 35.

*Over de onbepalende wijs en het deelwoord.*

I had the honour of speaking to him. He has had the misfortune of sustaining heavy losses. She will not have the boldness to deny that. We had the pleasure of finding that which we were looking for. You have promised to come and see me. My father has permitted me to go to the concert. Your brothers has advised me to wait a little longer. My mother has ordered him to stay at home. I am afraid of telling it him. I request you to tell your father, that we will wait for him. He has forgotten to pay his uncle a visit. We have proposed to him to take a walk with us. We flatter ourselves to see you at our house this afternoon. He has threatened him to inform his father of it. It seldom depends on us to have many friends, and to be satisfied. My nephew has begged me to lend him my horse for a few days. You would greatly oblige me to recommend me to him. I am obliged to set out to-morrow. I am sorry not to be able to stay any longer.

## 36.

I have invited Mr. N. to dine with us. We have employed that money to relieve several honest families. He has consented to defray the charges. You must accustom yourself to speak distinctly. I practise to write french letters. That man thinks of nothing but eating and drinking. My uncle has a beautiful horse to sell. This fish is not good to eat. My son has still to write several letters. Help me to finish my exercise. What more have you got to do to-day? Whose turn is it to play? I am to play, and you are not. There is somebody who

wants to speak to your uncle. That is very difficult to be done. It is very difficult to show you that. We have still to make two miles, before we arrive at N. Since when are you learning to draw? You are fond of reading instructive books, and your brother is fond of taking a walk.

## 37.

Wij hadden de eer met uwe zuster te spreken; zij vertelde ons dat haar vader vertrokken was. Gij hebt het genoegen gehad de boeken weder te vinden, welke uw jongste broeder verloren had. Ik zoude het hem gaarne zeggen, maar ik ben bevreesd dat hij het aan zijnen neef zal vertellen. Wij hopen uwe grootmoeder nog dezen avond te zien. De tuinman van onzen vriend had ons beloofd vijf en twintig appelen te zenden, doch wij zijn zeer ontevreden over zijne nalatigheid. Zijt gij niet verpligt nog dezen avond te vertrekken? Ik denk nog eenige dagen hier te blijven. Hij heeft de smart ondervonden zijnen vader te verliezen. Wanneer is hij gestorven?

## 38.

Let me do as I like, every thing will succeed. I will not permit you to write that letter; I will prevent you from writing it. I will order a new coat for you, if you behave well and are diligent. My nephew has confessed to me not to have a penny. Do you think of setting out to-morrow? I depend on staying here some time longer. You think yourself more clever than Lewis; but you are mistaken. I shall give you nothing, because you do not like to wait. If you wish to get the permission of setting out the day after to morrow, you must be very diligent. My sister pretends to have seen you at the concert. This child is sick from having eaten too much. My

friend set out without taking leave of me. My cousin came to announce to me a very good piece of news. In a two days I hope to see my parents again. You seem to be very well satisfied. I have been looking for my brother without finding him. I have sent my footman to town, to speak to my tailor. I believed to find you at my uncle's. I will settle my concerns before setting out.

## 39.

On entering my room, I found my brother. Going to church, we met your cousins. Mr. N. wishing to speak to me, I must go to see him. Not being able to go out to-day, I beg you to lend me some good books. My wife being sick, I cannot go to the concert. On seeing that it would rain, my sister fled with the greatest precipitation. Your cousin being much more diligent than you, will make more rapid progress. The general refusing to surrender, was killed on the spot. Not knowing where to find you, I returned home. Saying these words, he threw himself at his feet. Being easily satisfied, he is always happy. Being obliged to set out to-morrow, I am come to take leave of you. Being afraid of awaking you, we only whispered. I cut my finger in mending your pen. We generally make ourselves odious by speaking the truth. Never having known the pleasure of having children, I do not regret it.

## 40.

We have gathered strawberries. The strawberries we have gathered are delicious. Have you paid the landlady? Yes, I have paid her. Have you mended my pen? No, I have not yet mended it. The figure which my brother has drawn, is really very difficult. Here is the letter which you have dictated to me. Have you read it? Have you

sealed my letter? I have sealed it and carried it to the post-office. Have you put on your garters? Yes, I have put them on. We have invited your sister to come to see us to-morrow. If you have invited her, she is sure to come. Have you sent my books to the bookbinder's? Do you know how many engravings I have received? My mother was greatly rejoiced at seeing you. Those gentlemen have taken a great deal of pains. My sisters have amused themselves at the concert. They have determined to going there the next time also. This man has made himself many enemies. The enemies he has made himself are innumerable.

## 41.

Toen wij naar uwen oom gingen (*going*), ontmoetten wij de zuster der koningin met haren oudsten broeder. Toen wij den tuin intraden, zagen wij dadelijk, dat de tuinman het gras gemaaid had. Daar het kind niet in staat is (*not being able*) te gaan, moet de meid het dragen. Dewijl mijn kind ziek is, heb ik uwen neef naar den doctor gezonden. Dewijl uwe zuster spaarzamer is dan gij, zal zij eerlang schoone boeken kunnen kopen. Wij maken ons nimmer bemind, als wij onbeleefd zijn. De boeken, (welke) wij verkocht hebben, waren nog nieuw. Hier zijn de brieven, welke gij geschreven hebt. De appelen, welke gij geplukt hebt, kosten twee gulden. De kinderen, welke in den tuin des grootvaders speelden, zijn naar den Haag vertrokken. Gij hebt u gisteren wel vermaakt. Ik heb het niet gemaakt. Aan wien hebt gij de prenten gezonden? Indien gij mij hadt genoodigd, zoude ik zeker gekomen zijn.

## 42.

The crying children ran after their mother. The frightened dog ran sneaking away. My offended brother told

us that he would never again go with us. The amusing tricks of his dog pleased the whole company. We swam to the assistance of the drowning child. The afflicted woman knew not where to look for assistance. They placed the covered dish before the general. Have you seen the deserted village? My sister will bring you the desired instructions. The despairing old man hid his tears. The dead dog belonged to his brother-in-law. Have you seen the picture of the drinking sailor? He caught her fainting daughter in her arms. She showed me the broken glasses. A saddled horse was ready for him. I like to see a smiling face.

43.

He wanted me to show him my uncle's engravings. I desired them to give me a fair copy of their exercises. They wished us to send their letter to Paris as soon as possible. My uncle desired me to stay at home until my brother's return. I believed the child to be sick; but I am glad it is not true. Why did he want us to conceal it from his family? He did not wish you to leave town to soon. Did he confess this letter to be of his own handwriting? He determined on my being sent to a boarding-school. He advised the book to be taken away from us. I confirm these circumstances to be perfectly true. I do not believe the ship to be arrived. The master required the books to be shut. We observed her to be sad. She knew him to be an honest man. They presumed us to be rich. She remembered him to have been present. He suffered himself to be beaten. We suffered ourselves to be punished.

44.

*Shall, zullen, moeten. will, zullen, willen.*

Shall my son show my horse? Will you come with me to my aunt's? We will bring you some very fine red

apples. I would not give him the money, I was afraid he would lose it. Will he carry the letters to the post-office? He has offended me, and he shall suffer for it. Thou shalt repent of thy obstinacy. Wilt thou not lend me thy horse? I want to ride to my uncle's country-seat. You shall have your money, as soon as I have got mine. I will not be present when he is bled; for I know that he will cry. I shall tell it him, if he is there. Shall you not be able to finish that in one day? He would be happy to find them all in good health. Should you not be glad to sell your horse at that price? Will you let me have it at that price? He shall not do it. I will not have such a servant.

45.

*I can, ik kan; I may, ik kan, ik mag; I dare, ik durf.*

Reading does not fatigue me, I can read for eight hours together. He can neither cypher nor draw. I cannot go out to-day, my mother will not permit me to do so. May I speak to you now? I cannot now speak to you about it, I must be at home at three o'clock. He cannot yet begin it, his cousin is waiting for him. My son cannot stay with you, he must go to school. I have never been able to read better. Now she may open the desk, if she can find the key. That may be, but I doubt it. You may go to the play, if you like. May she show it me? You might have seen him, if you had looked about you. You may hear it now. That may be true. You may still be happy. We might have found him there. I dare not provoke him, he is much stronger than I. He durst not come forward with it. We dare not attack the lion, he seems to be very fierce and strong.



*Ought, should, moest, zoude, zoudt, enz.*

You should have taught your children to be silent, when older people are speaking. She should take care of her poor brother. We ought not to have lost our books. You ought not to have brought that naughty child with you. Ought he not to have written two exercises? She should have sent some one, in order to inform me of it. I ought not to have been in so great a hurry. You should have sold your garden at that price. You should have taken greater pains. You ought not to have provoked him to it. You should have been there in the forenoon. Ought you to have read that to your sister? He should go there before you. He should have been there before his brother. Why should I have taken it from him? He ought not to have seen it.

Ik kan heden niet komen, want ik moet nog eenige brieven schrijven. Hij kan noch het eene, noch het andere doen. Uwe moeder kan er nu niet met u over spreken, kom morgen weder. Zij mag niet bij mij blijven, want ik weet dat zij zeer ongehoorzaam geweest is. Dat kan wel zijn, maar ik twijfel er aan. Ik durf niet op het ijs loopen, want ik ben bang te vallen. Wij durven niets te zeggen. Dat kan waar zijn. Nu mag hij de deur opendoen en binnenkomen. Wij moesten onze zakdoeken niet verloren hebben. Waarom moest hij hier gebleven zijn? Hadt gij niet twee brieven moeten schrijven? Ik durf het niet verzekeren, maar ik zal het uwen vader vragen. Moest gij het hem niet reeds lang gevraagd hebben? Gij hadt uwe kleederen tot den bepaalden prijs moeten verkoopen.

*I am reading, ik lees (ik ben aan het lezen).*

What are you reading there? I am reading the book which you lent me yesterday. What is your brother doing? He is selecting a few steel-pens for my sister. Where was your brother sitting, when the concert began? He and his wife were sitting near the orchestra. The little boy fell into the water whilst I was fishing. We were just speaking of him, when he entered. Whilst some were reading, others were playing at draughts, and I was making my exercises. The fire broke forth, whilst we were sleeping. I was reading the newspapers and drinking my coffee, when the door of my room opened and the physician entered. Whilst we were waiting for him at my uncle's, he was at the coffee-house, playing at billiards and smoking segars.

*\*I am going to read, Ik lees, ik ben aan het lezen.*  
*I am beginning to read, ik begin juist te lezen.*  
*I have done reading, ik heb gedaan (ben gereed) met lezen.*  
*I am about, ik sta op het punt, enz.*

I was going to pay a visit to my aunt, when her footman came and told me, that I should not find her at home. I cannot accompany you, you see that I am going to learn my french lesson; but if you will wait till I have done learning, I will follow you wherever you please. What are you going to tell her? He will be here, as soon as he has done drawing. You must really read this history. I do read it, and with the greatest attention. You would have met him at the play, if he had done dining. I was about to depart, when I received a letter

from my father, in which he told me that my presence was not yet necessary. I was just going to answer, when a hint from my mother told me that she preferred my being silent.

## 50.

*I happened (chanced) to see him*, Ik zag hem toevallig, bij geluk.

Should you happen to see your cousin, pray tell him that the letters of recommandation will be ready by six o'clock to-morrow evening. We went to the parade, but no soldiers were to be seen. Your horse was not to be sold, it was too little. We were looking about for it everywhere, but it was nowhere to be found. He happened to find my ring in her brother's desk. They sometimes happened to see us together. I chanced to come too late, and so I could not do your message. If that should happen, he would be saved. Should you chance to meet him there, tell him that my dogs are at his service. These rooms are to be let; what may the rent be? Where are you to be met with at two o'clock? His fault was not to be concealed. It is not to be expected that she will take her children along with her.

## 51.

Waar zat uwe zuster toen gij de kamer binnentraadt? Zij zat naast haren oom. De knaap vroeg het mij, toen ik bezig was met lezen. Hij koopt juist een paar zijden handschoenen. Ziet gij wel dien man? Dat is de Bankier B., hij gaat naar de beurs. Het spijt mij dat ik niet met uwe neven kan medegaan, want ik schrijf eenen brief aan mijne tante, die nog vóór vijf ure moet verzonden worden; maar indien zij wachten willen tot ik gereed ben

met schrijven, dan wil ik gaarne doen wat zij wenschen. Gij moet waarlijk medegaan, want zonder u hebben zij geen vermaak. De koning stond op het punt te vertrekken, toen de koningin aankwam. Indien gij bij geluk mijnen meester ziet, zeg hem dan dat ik hem morgen de boeken en pennen zal zenden. Wij waren uitgereden om de matrozen te zien, maar wij kwamen te laat, want er was niets meer te zien. Ik zag haar bij toeval en vertelde haar alles wat ik van de zaak wist.

## Lijst van onregelmatige werkwoorden.

De tijden met \* geteekend zijn ook regelmatig. Indien het \* voorafgaat, verdient de regelmatige vervoeging de voorkeur.

<i>I abide,</i>	ik blijf.	<i>begotten,</i>	geteeld.
<i>I abode,</i>	ik bleef.	<i>I begin,</i>	ik begin.
<i>abode,</i>	gebleven.	<i>I began,</i>	ik begon.
<i>I am,</i>	ik ben.	<i>begun,</i>	begonnen.
<i>I was,</i>	ik was.	<i>I behold,</i>	ik zie.
<i>been,</i>	geweest.	<i>I beheld,</i>	ik zag.
<i>I arise,</i>	ik sta op.	<i>beheld,</i>	gezien.
<i>I arose,</i>	ik stond op.	<i>I bend,</i>	ik buig.
<i>arisen,</i>	opgestaan.	<i>I bent,</i>	ik boog.
<i>I awake,</i>	ik ontwaak.	<i>bent,</i>	gebogen.
<i>I awoke,</i>	ik ontwaakte.	<i>I bereave,</i>	ik beroof.
<i>awaked,</i>	ontwaakt.	<i>I bereft,</i>	ik beroofde.
<i>I bake,</i>	ik bak.	<i>bereft,</i>	berooft.
<i>I baked,</i>	ik bakte.	<i>I beseech,</i>	ik verzoek.
<i>baken,</i>	gebakken.	<i>I besought,</i>	ik verzocht.
<i>I hear,</i>	ik breng voort.	<i>besought,</i>	verzocht.
<i>I bare,</i>	ik bragt voort.	<i>I bid,</i>	ik beveel.
<i>born,</i>	geboren.	<i>I bade,</i>	ik beval.
<i>I bear,</i>	ik draag.	<i>bid,</i>	bevolen.
<i>I bore,</i>	ik droeg.	<i>I bind,</i>	ik bind.
<i>borne,</i>	gedragen.	<i>I bound,</i>	ik bond.
<i>I beat,</i>	ik sla, sloeg.	<i>bound,</i>	gebonden.
<i>beat, beaten.</i>	geslagen.	<i>I bite,</i>	ik bijt.
<i>I become,</i>	ik word.	<i>I bit,</i>	ik beet.
<i>I became,</i>	ik werd.	<i>bit, bitten,</i>	gebeten.
<i>become,</i>	geworden.	<i>I bleed,</i>	ik bloed.
<i>I beget,</i>	ik teel.	<i>I bled,</i>	ik bloedde.
<i>I begot,</i>	ik teelde.	<i>bled,</i>	gebloed.

<i>I blow,</i>	ik blaas.	<i>I come,</i>	ik kom.
<i>I blew,</i>	ik blies.	<i>I came,</i>	ik kwam.
<i>blown,</i>	geblazen.	<i>come,</i>	gekomen.
<i>I break,</i>	ik breek.	<i>I cost,</i>	ik kost, kostte.
<i>I broke,</i>	ik brak.	<i>cost,</i>	gekost.
<i>broken,</i>	gebroken.	<i>I creep,</i>	ik kruip.
<i>I breed,</i>	ik voed op.	<i>I crept,</i>	ik kroop.
<i>I bred,</i>	ik voedde op.	<i>crept,</i>	gekropen.
<i>bred,</i>	opgevoed.	<i>I crow,</i>	ik kraai.
<i>I bring,</i>	ik breng.	<i>I *crew,</i>	ik kraaide.
<i>I brought,</i>	ik bragt.	<i>crowed,</i>	gekraaid.
<i>brought,</i>	gebragt.	<i>I cut,</i>	ik snijd, ik sneed.
<i>I build,</i>	ik bouw.	<i>cut,</i>	gesneden.
<i>I built,</i>	ik bouwde.	<i>I dare,</i>	ik durf, mag.
<i>built,</i>	gebouwd.	<i>I *durst,</i>	ik durfde.
<i>I burn,</i>	ik brand.	<i>dared,</i>	gedurfd.
<i>I *burnt,</i>	ik brandde.	<i>I deal,</i>	ik handel.
<i>*burnt,</i>	gebrand.	<i>I dealt,</i>	ik handelde.
<i>I burst,</i>	ik barst, barstte.	<i>dealt*,</i>	gehandeld.
<i>burst,</i>	geborsten.	<i>I dig,</i>	ik graaf.
<i>I buy,</i>	ik koop.	<i>I dug*,</i>	ik groef.
<i>I bought,</i>	ik kocht.	<i>dug*,</i>	gegraven.
<i>bought,</i>	gekocht.	<i>I do,</i>	ik doe.
<i>I can,</i>	ik kan.	<i>I did,</i>	ik deed.
<i>I could,</i>	ik konde.	<i>done,</i>	gedaan.
<i>been able,</i>	gekunnen.	<i>I draw,</i>	ik trek, teeken.
<i>I cast,</i>	ik werp, wierp.	<i>I drew,</i>	ik trok.
<i>cast,</i>	geworpen.	<i>drawn,</i>	getrokken.
<i>I catch,</i>	ik vang.	<i>I drink,</i>	ik drink.
<i>I caught,</i>	ik ving.	<i>I drank,</i>	ik dronk.
<i>caught,</i>	gevangen.	<i>drunk,</i>	gedronken.
<i>I chide,</i>	ik berisp.	<i>I drive,</i>	ik drijf.
<i>I chid,</i>	ik berispte.	<i>I drove,</i>	ik dreef.
<i>chid, chidden,</i>	berispt.	<i>driven,</i>	gedreven.
<i>I choose,</i>	ik kies.	<i>I dwell,</i>	ik woon.
<i>I chose,</i>	ik koos.	<i>I *dwelt,</i>	ik woonde.
<i>chosen,</i>	gekozen.	<i>*dwelt,</i>	gewoond.
<i>I cleave,</i>	ik kloof.	<i>I eat,</i>	ik eet.
<i>I cleft,</i>	ik kloofde.	<i>I eat, ate,</i>	ik at.
<i>cleft, cloven.</i>	gekloofd.	<i>eaten, eat,</i>	gegeten.
<i>I cling,</i>	ik kleef.	<i>I fall,</i>	ik val.
<i>I clung,</i>	ik kleefde.	<i>I fell,</i>	ik viel.
<i>clung,</i>	gekleefd.	<i>fallen,</i>	gevallen.
<i>I clothe,</i>	ik kleed.	<i>I feed,</i>	ik voed.
<i>I clothed,</i>	ik kleedde.	<i>I fed,</i>	ik voedde.
<i>clothed,</i>	gekleed.	<i>fed,</i>	gevoed.

<i>I feel,</i>	ik voel.	<i>I gave,</i>	ik gaf.
<i>I felt,</i>	ik voelde.	<i>given,</i>	gegeven.
<i>felt,</i>	gevoeld.	<i>I go,</i>	ik ga.
<i>I fight,</i>	ik vecht.	<i>I went,</i>	ik ging.
<i>I fought,</i>	ik vocht.	<i>gone,</i>	gegaan.
<i>fought,</i>	gevochten.	<i>I grave,</i>	ik graaf.
<i>I find,</i>	ik vind.	<i>I graved,</i>	ik groef.
<i>I found,</i>	ik vond.	<i>graven,</i>	gegraven.
<i>found,</i>	gevonden.	<i>I grind,</i>	ik maal.
<i>I flee,</i>	ik vlied.	<i>I ground,</i>	ik maalde.
<i>I fled,</i>	ik vlood.	<i>ground,</i>	gemalen.
<i>fled,</i>	gevloden.	<i>I grow,</i>	ik groei, word.
<i>I fling,</i>	ik werp.	<i>I grew,</i>	ik groeide.
<i>I flung,</i>	ik wierp.	<i>grown,</i>	gegroeid.
<i>flung,</i>	geworpen.	<i>I hang,</i>	ik hang op.
<i>I fly,</i>	ik vlieg.	<i>I hung,</i>	ik hing op.
<i>I flew,</i>	ik vloog.	<i>hung*,</i>	opgehangen.
<i>flown,</i>	gevlogen.	<i>I have,</i>	ik heb.
<i>I forbear,</i>	ik vermijd.	<i>I had,</i>	ik had.
<i>I forbore,</i>	ik vermeed.	<i>had,</i>	gehad.
<i>forborn,</i>	vermeden.	<i>I hear,</i>	ik hoor.
<i>I forbid,</i>	ik verbied.	<i>I heard,</i>	ik hoorde.
<i>I forbade,</i>	ik verbood.	<i>heard,</i>	gehoord.
<i>forbidden,</i>	verboden.	<i>I hew,</i>	ik hak, houw.
<i>I forget,</i>	ik vergeet.	<i>I hewed,</i>	ik hakte.
<i>I forgot,</i>	ik vergat.	<i>hewn,</i>	gehakt.
<i>forgotten,</i>	vergeten.	<i>I hide,</i>	ik verberg.
<i>I forgive,</i>	ik vergeef.	<i>I hid,</i>	ik verborg.
<i>I forgave,</i>	ik vergaf.	<i>hid, hidden,</i>	verborgen.
<i>forgiven,</i>	vergeven.	<i>I hit,</i>	ik tref, trof.
<i>I forsake,</i>	ik verlaat.	<i>hit,</i>	getroffen.
<i>I forsook,</i>	ik verliet.	<i>I hold,</i>	ik houd.
<i>forsaken,</i>	verlaten.	<i>I held,</i>	ik hield.
<i>it freezes,</i>	het vriest.	<i>held,</i>	gehouden.
<i>it froze,</i>	het vroom.	<i>I hurt,</i>	ik bezeer, bezeerde.
<i>frozen,</i>	gevroren.	<i>hurt,</i>	bezeerd.
<i>I get,</i>	ik verkrijg.	<i>I keep,</i>	ik houd.
<i>I got,</i>	ik verkreeg.	<i>I kept,</i>	ik hield.
<i>got, gotten,</i>	verkregen.	<i>kept,</i>	gehouden.
<i>I gild,</i>	ik verguld.	<i>I kneel,</i>	ik kniel.
<i>I *gilt,</i>	ik verguldde.	<i>I knelt*,</i>	ik knielde.
<i>*gilt,</i>	verguld.	<i>knelt*,</i>	gekniel.
<i>I gird,</i>	ik gord aan.	<i>I knit,</i>	ik brei.
<i>I *girt,</i>	ik gordde aan.	<i>I *knit,</i>	ik breide.
<i>*girt,</i>	aangegord.	<i>knit,</i>	gebroid.
<i>I give,</i>	ik geef.	<i>I know,</i>	ik ken, weet.

<i>I knew,</i>	ik kende.	<i>I mistook,</i>	ik vergiste mij.
<i>known,</i>	gekend.	<i>mistaken,</i>	vergist.
<i>I lade,</i>	ik laad.	<i>I mow,</i>	ik maai.
<i>I laded,</i>	ik laadde.	<i>I mowed,</i>	ik maaide.
<i>laden,</i>	geladen.	<i>mown*,</i>	gemaaid.
<i>I lay,</i>	ik leg.	<i>I must,</i>	ik moet, moest.
<i>I laid,</i>	ik legde.	<i>I overtake,</i>	ik haal in.
<i>I lead,</i>	ik leid.	<i>I overtook,</i>	ik haalde in.
<i>I led,</i>	ik leidde.	<i>overtaken,</i>	ingeaald.
<i>led,</i>	geleid.	<i>I partake,</i>	ik neem deel.
<i>I lean,</i>	ik leun.	<i>I partook,</i>	ik nam deel.
<i>I *leant,</i>	ik leunde.	<i>partaken,</i>	deelgenomen.
<i>*leant,</i>	geleund.	<i>I pay,</i>	ik betaal.
<i>I leap,</i>	ik spring.	<i>I paid,</i>	ik betaalde.
<i>I *lept,</i>	ik sprong.	<i>paid,</i>	betaald.
<i>*lept,</i>	gesprongen.	<i>I put,</i>	ik leg, legde.
<i>I leave,</i>	ik verlaat.	<i>put,</i>	gelegd.
<i>I left,</i>	ik verliet.	<i>I read,</i>	ik lees.
<i>left,</i>	verlaten.	<i>I read,</i>	ik las.
<i>I lend,</i>	ik leen.	<i>read,</i>	gelezen.
<i>I lent,</i>	ik leende.	<i>I rend,</i>	ik verscheur.
<i>lent,</i>	geleend.	<i>I rent,</i>	ik verscheurde.
<i>I let,</i>	ik laat, liet.	<i>rent,</i>	verscheurd.
<i>let,</i>	gelaten.	<i>I rid,</i>	ik bevrijd, bevrijdde.
<i>I lie,</i>	ik lig.	<i>rid,</i>	bevrijd.
<i>I lay,</i>	ik lag.	<i>I ride,</i>	ik rijd.
<i>lain,</i>	gelegen.	<i>I rode,</i>	ik reed.
<i>I load,</i>	ik belaad.	<i>ridden, rode,</i>	gereden.
<i>I loaded,</i>	ik belaadde.	<i>I ring,</i>	ik luid.
<i>*loaden,</i>	geladen.	<i>I rung, rang,</i>	ik luidde.
<i>I lose,</i>	ik verlies.	<i>rung,</i>	geluid.
<i>I lost,</i>	ik verloor.	<i>I rise,</i>	ik sta op.
<i>lost,</i>	verloren.	<i>I rose,</i>	ik stond op.
<i>I make,</i>	ik maak.	<i>risen,</i>	opgestaan.
<i>I made,</i>	ik maakte.	<i>I rive,</i>	ik splijt.
<i>I may,</i>	ik durf, mag.	<i>I rived,</i>	ik spleet.
<i>I might,</i>	ik durfde.	<i>riven,</i>	gespleten.
<i>I mean,</i>	ik meen.	<i>I run,</i>	ik loop.
<i>I meant,</i>	ik meende.	<i>I ran,</i>	ik liep.
<i>meant,</i>	gemeend.	<i>run,</i>	gelopen.
<i>I meet,</i>	ik ontmoet.	<i>I say,</i>	ik zeg.
<i>I met,</i>	ik ontmoette.	<i>I said,</i>	ik zeide.
<i>met,</i>	ontmoet.	<i>said,</i>	gezegd.
<i>I mistake,</i>	ik vergis mij.	<i>I saw,</i>	ik zaag.
		<i>I sawed,</i>	ik zaagde.
		<i>sawn,</i>	gezaagd.

<i>I see,</i>	ik zie.	<i>shrunk,</i>	geweken.
<i>I saw,</i>	ik zag.	<i>I shrive,</i>	ik biecht.
<i>seen,</i>	gezien.	<i>I shrove,</i>	ik biechtte.
<i>I seek,</i>	ik zoek.	<i>shriven,</i>	gebiecht.
<i>I sought,</i>	ik zocht.	<i>I shut,</i>	ik sluit, sloot.
<i>sought,</i>	gezocht.	<i>shut,</i>	gesloten.
<i>I sell,</i>	ik verkoop.	<i>I sing,</i>	ik zing.
<i>I sold,</i>	ik verkocht.	<i>I sang, sung,</i>	ik zong.
<i>sold,</i>	verkocht.	<i>sung,</i>	gezongen.
<i>I send,</i>	ik zend.	<i>I sink,</i>	ik zink.
<i>I sent,</i>	ik zond.	<i>I sunk, sank,</i>	ik zonk.
<i>sent,</i>	gezonden.	<i>sunk,</i>	gezonken.
<i>I set,</i>	ik zet, ik zette.	<i>I sit,</i>	ik zit.
<i>set,</i>	gezet.	<i>I sat,</i>	ik zat.
<i>I shake,</i>	ik schud.	<i>sat,</i>	gezet.
<i>I shook,</i>	ik schudde.	<i>I slay,</i>	ik sla dood.
<i>shaken,</i>	geschud.	<i>I slew,</i>	ik sloeg dood.
<i>I shall,</i>	ik zal.	<i>slain,</i>	dood geslagen.
<i>I should,</i>	ik zoude.	<i>I sleep,</i>	ik slaap.
<i>I shave,</i>	ik scheer.	<i>I slept,</i>	ik sliep.
<i>I shaved,</i>	ik schoor.	<i>slept,</i>	geslapen.
<i>shaved,</i>	geschoren.	<i>I slide,</i>	ik glijd.
<i>I shear,</i>	ik scheer, snijd af.	<i>I slid,</i>	ik gleed.
<i>I shore,</i>	ik schoor.	<i>slidden,</i>	gegleden.
<i>shorn,</i>	geschoren.	<i>I sling,</i>	ik slinger.
<i>I shed,</i>	ik vergiet, vergoot.	<i>I slung,</i>	ik slingerde.
<i>shed,</i>	vergoten.	<i>slung,</i>	geslingerd.
<i>I shine,</i>	ik schijn.	<i>I slink,</i>	ik sluip.
<i>I shone*,</i>	ik scheen.	<i>I slunk,</i>	ik sloop.
<i>shone,</i>	geschenen.	<i>slunk,</i>	geslopen.
<i>I show,</i>	} ik toon.	<i>I slit,</i>	ik slijt, spleet.
<i>I shew,</i>			
<i>I showed,</i>	} ik toonde.	<i>slit,</i>	gespleten.
<i>I shewed,</i>			
<i>shown,</i>	} getoond.	<i>I smell,</i>	ik riek.
<i>shewn,</i>			
<i>I shoe,</i>	ik besla.	<i>I smelt,</i>	ik rook.
<i>I shod,</i>	ik besloeg.	<i>smelt,</i>	geroken.
<i>shod,</i>	beslagen.	<i>I smite,</i>	ik sla.
<i>I shoot,</i>	ik schiet.	<i>I smote,</i>	ik sloeg.
<i>I shot,</i>	ik schoot.	<i>smit, smitten,</i>	geslagen.
<i>shot,</i>	geschoten.	<i>I sow,</i>	ik zaai.
<i>I shred,</i>	ik snijd, sneed klein.	<i>I sowed,</i>	ik zaaide.
<i>shred,</i>	klein gesneden.	<i>sown*,</i>	gezaaid.
<i>I shrink,</i>	ik wijk.	<i>I speak,</i>	ik spreek.
<i>I shrunk, shrank,</i>	ik week.	<i>I spoke,</i>	ik sprak.
		<i>spoken,</i>	gesproken.
		<i>I speed,</i>	ik haast mij.
		<i>I sped,</i>	ik haastte mij.

<i>sped,</i>	gehaast.	<i>I strove,</i>	ik streefde.
<i>I spend,</i>	ik breng door.	<i>striven,</i>	gestreefd.
<i>I spent,</i>	ik bragt door.	<i>I strew,</i>	ik strooi.
<i>spent,</i>	doorgebragt.	<i>I strewed,</i>	ik strooide.
<i>I spill,</i>	ik vergiet.	<i>*strown,</i>	gestrooid.
<i>I spilt*,</i>	ik vergoot.	<i>I swear,</i>	ik zweer.
<i>spilt*,</i>	vergoten.	<i>I swore,</i>	ik zwoer.
<i>I spin,</i>	ik spin.	<i>sworn,</i>	gezworen.
<i>I spun, span,</i>	ik spon.	<i>I sweep,</i>	ik veeg.
<i>spun,</i>	gesponnen.	<i>I swept,</i>	ik veegde.
<i>I spit,</i>	ik spuw.	<i>swept,</i>	geveegd.
<i>I spit, spat,</i>	ik spuwde.	<i>I swell,</i>	ik zwel op.
<i>spit, spitten,</i>	gespuwd.	<i>I swelled,</i>	ik zwol op.
<i>I split,</i>	ik slijt, spleet.	<i>*swollen,</i>	opgezwollen.
<i>I split,</i>	gespleten.	<i>I swim,</i>	ik zwem.
<i>I spread,</i>	ik breid uit, breidde uit.	<i>I swam,</i>	ik zwom.
	uit.	<i>swum,</i>	gezwommen.
<i>spread,</i>	uitgebreid.	<i>I swing,</i>	ik zwaai.
<i>I spring,</i>	ik ontspring.	<i>I swung,</i>	ik zwaaide.
<i>I sprung, sprang,</i>	ik ontsprong.	<i>swung,</i>	gezwaaid.
<i>sprung,</i>	ontsprongen.	<i>I take,</i>	ik neem.
<i>I stand,</i>	ik sta.	<i>I took,</i>	ik nam.
<i>I stood,</i>	ik stond.	<i>taken,</i>	genomen.
<i>stood,</i>	gestaan.	<i>I teach,</i>	ik onderwijs.
<i>I steal,</i>	ik steel.	<i>I taught,</i>	ik onderwees.
<i>I stole,</i>	ik stal.	<i>taught,</i>	onderwezen.
<i>stolen,</i>	gestolen.	<i>I tear,</i>	ik verscheur.
<i>I stick,</i>	ik steek.	<i>I tore,</i>	ik verscheurde.
<i>I stuck,</i>	ik stak.	<i>torn,</i>	verscheurd.
<i>stuck,</i>	gestoken.	<i>I tell,</i>	ik zeg.
<i>I sting,</i>	ik steek.	<i>I told,</i>	ik zeide.
<i>I stung,</i>	ik stak.	<i>told,</i>	gezegd.
<i>stung,</i>	gestoken.	<i>I think,</i>	ik denk.
<i>I stink,</i>	ik stink.	<i>I thought,</i>	ik dacht.
<i>I stunk,</i>	ik stonk.	<i>thought,</i>	gedacht.
<i>stunk,</i>	gestonken.	<i>I thrive,</i>	ik vorder.
<i>I stride,</i>	ik stap.	<i>I thrive,</i>	ik vorderde.
<i>I strode,</i>	ik stapte.	<i>thriven,</i>	gevorderd.
<i>stridden,</i>	gestapt.	<i>I throw,</i>	ik werp.
<i>I strike,</i>	ik sla.	<i>I threw,</i>	ik wierp.
<i>I struck,</i>	ik sloeg.	<i>thrown,</i>	geworpen.
<i>struck,</i>	geslagen.	<i>I thrust,</i>	ik stoot, stiet.
<i>I string,</i>	ik wond op.	<i>thrust,</i>	gestooten.
<i>I strung,</i>	ik wond op.	<i>I tread,</i>	ik treed.
<i>strung,</i>	opgewonden.	<i>I trod,</i>	ik trad.
<i>I strive,</i>	ik streef.	<i>trodden,</i>	getreden.

<i>I undertake</i> ,	ik onderneem.	<i>I would</i> ,	ik wilde.
<i>I undertook</i> ,	ik ondernam.	<i>I win</i> ,	ik win.
<i>undertaken</i> ,	ondernomen.	<i>I won</i> ,	ik won.
<i>I undo</i> ,	ik vernietig.	<i>won</i> ,	gewonnen.
<i>I undid</i> ,	ik vernietigde.	<i>I wind</i> ,	ik wind.
<i>undone</i> ,	vernietigd.	<i>I wound</i> ,	ik wond.
<i>I wear</i> ,	ik draag.	<i>wound</i> ,	gewonden.
<i>I wore</i> ,	ik droeg.	<i>I work</i> ,	ik werk.
<i>worn</i> ,	gedragen.	<i>I *wrought</i> ,	ik werkte.
<i>I weave</i> ,	ik weef.	<i>*wrought</i> ,	gewerkt.
<i>I wove</i> ,	ik weefde.	<i>I wring</i> ,	ik draai.
<i>woven</i> ,	geweeft.	<i>I wrung</i> ,	ik draaide.
<i>I weep</i> ,	ik ween.	<i>wrung</i> ,	gedraaid.
<i>I wept</i> ,	ik weende.	<i>I write</i> ,	ik schrijf.
<i>wept</i> ,	geweend.	<i>I wrote</i> ,	ik schreef.
<i>I will</i> ,	ik wil.	<i>written</i> ,	geschreven.

### A A N M E R K I N G E N .

1) *To bend*: *bended*, hetwelk somtijds als een deelwoord gebruikt wordt, is eigenlijk een bijvoegelijk naamwoord. Men zegt: *a bended bow*, een gespannen boog.

2) *Can* heeft geen onbepaalde wijs en deelwoord. Wil men nu de onbepaalde wijs of de zamengestelde tijden van het werkwoord *kunnen* bezigen, dan gebruikt men hiervoor het werkwoord *zijn*, met de bijvoeging *able*, in staat: *to be able*, in staat zijn, kunnen; *I have been able*, ik ben in staat geweest, ik heb gekunnen; *I shall be able*, ik zal kunnen. Zelfs de niet zamengestelde tijden kunnen op de zelfde wijze gevormd worden; want in plaats van *I can*, zegt men soms *I am able*, en in plaats van *I could*, *I was able*.

3) *To cleave*, zich aan iets sluiten, is regelmatig.

4) *To clothe* is als bedrijvend werkwoord steeds regelmatig; dikwijls wordt ook het (onregelmatige) verleden deelw. *clad* gebruikt.

5) De zamengestelde tijden van *to come* kunnen met *be* of *have* gevormd worden, hoewel met *be* meer algemeen.

6) *To dare*, uitdagen, is nooit onregelmatig; *durst* wordt weinig gebezigd.

7) Sedert eenigen tijd vindt men bij eenige schrijvers het verl. deelw. *drank* in plaats van *drunk*. *Drunken* is een bijvoeg. naamw. b. v. *a drunken fellow*, een dronkaard.

8) Zelfs goede schrijvers gebruiken soms *fly* in plaats van *flee*, hetgeen echter niet spraakkunstig is.

9) *Gilded* is het verl. deelw., *gilt* gebruikt men als bijvoeg. naamw.

10) De zamengestelde tijden van *to go* worden gevormd met het hulpwerkwoord *to be*; b. v. *they are gone away*, zij zijn heen gegaan.

11) *Hanged* wordt gebruikt indien men van eene doodstraf spreekt.

12) *Hidden* is meestal een bijv. naamw., b. v. *a hidden treasure*, een verborgen schat.

13) *To lie*, liegen, is regelmatig.

14) *May* heeft noch onbepaalde wijs, noch verl. deelw.

15) *Must* heeft noch onbep. wijs, noch verled. deelw., men kan deze echter vormen door *to be* en *obliged*, b. v. *to be obliged*, moeten; *I shall be obliged*, ik zal moeten.

16) *Stricken* wordt zelden, maar dan ook slechts als bijvoeg. naamwoord gebruikt.

17) *Swollen* vindt men bijna altijd als bijvoeg. naamw.

18) *To work* is regelmatig als onzijdig werkwoord, doch onregelmatig als bedrijvend werkwoord.

*Van den mensch.*

<i>The body,</i>	het ligchaam.	<i>the eye-lid,</i>	het ooglid.
<i>the head,</i>	het hoofd.	<i>the eye-lashes,</i>	de wimpers.
<i>the face,</i>	het aangezicht.	<i>the eye-ball,</i>	de oogappel.
<i>the forehead,</i>	het voorhoofd.	<i>the ear,</i>	het oor.
<i>the wrinkle,</i>	de rimpel.	<i>the hair,</i>	het haar.
<i>the eye,</i>	het oog.	<i>the cheek,</i>	de wang.
<i>the eye-brow,</i>	de wenkbrauw.	<i>the nose,</i>	de neus.
<i>the nostrils,</i>	de neusgaten.	<i>the tooth,</i>	de tand.
<i>the mouth,</i>	de mond.	<i>the teeth,</i>	de tanden.
<i>the lip,</i>	de lip.	<i>the tongue,</i>	de tong.
<i>the palate,</i>	het verhemelte.	<i>the chin,</i>	de kin.

Charles has a pain in his head. My friend has black hair. Your sister has beautiful blue eyes. This boy has a high forehead. The ass has long ears. The eye-brows and eye-lids embellish the face. These girls have red cheeks. Those people have wide mouths, flat noses and thick lips. That old woman has wrinkles on her forehead. That boy is fallen on his nose. The blood comes out of his nostrils. I have burned my palate. You must not put out your tongue. This child is making its teeth. My uncle has lost his fore-teeth. Your little brother has a pointed chin. Put some cotton into your ear. Can you not wipe your mouth?

<i>The neck,</i>	de hals.	<i>the hip,</i>	de heup.
<i>the throat,</i>	de keel.	<i>the knee,</i>	de knie.
<i>the shoulder,</i>	de schouder.	<i>the leg,</i>	het been.
<i>the back,</i>	de rug.	<i>the thigh,</i>	de dij.
<i>the arm,</i>	de arm.	<i>the foot,</i>	de voet.
<i>the elbow,</i>	de elleboog.	<i>the feet,</i>	de voeten.
<i>the fist,</i>	de vuist.	<i>the blood,</i>	het bloed.
<i>the hand,</i>	de hand.	<i>the vein,</i>	de ader.
<i>the finger,</i>	de vinger.	<i>the nerve,</i>	de zenuw.
<i>the nail,</i>	de nagel.	<i>the lungs,</i>	de long.
<i>the breast,</i>	de borst.	<i>the stomach,</i>	de maag.
<i>the belly,</i>	de buik.	<i>the heart,</i>	het hart.

My brother has wounded his elbow. He carries his arm in a sling. My hands and feet are warm. Do not make your fingers snap. Do not bite your nails. That naughty boy gave me a punch with his fist. Children must always have clean hands. That man carries a burden on his shoulders. He has a basket on his back. Hast thou got a weak stomach? I have a pain in my breast. My cousin has a pain in his belly. That man is so weak, that he can hardly stand on his legs. The blood circulates in the veins. That music affects the nerves. My son is short-sighted. Let us fall down on our knees. He has wounded his thigh. He has hurt his hip.

Uw oudste broeder heeft zwarte oogen en groote handen. De neef van den timmerman heeft zijne voorste tanden verloren. Hij toonde mij zijne vuist, toen ik in den tuin stond. Waarom hebt gij uwe handen niet gewasschen? Gij hebt altijd vuile handen; uw elleboog is ook morsig. Zet uwe voeten niet op den stoel, ik veroorloof het u niet. Deze oude man heeft pijn in de borst, hij zal weldra sterven. Dit meisje heeft eene ronde kin en roode wangen. Vloeit het bloed der dieren en menschen niet in de aderen? Welk kind is op zijne knieën gevallen? Deze aap heeft eenen langen rooden neus en kleine witte tanden. De leeuw heeft fraaije manen. Er zijn dieren met lange halzen.

*Van de kleeding.*

<i>The coat,</i>	de jas, rok.	<i>the sleeve,</i>	de mouw.
<i>the great coat,</i>	de overjas.	<i>the collar,</i>	de kraag.
<i>the cloak,</i>	de mantel.	<i>the hat,</i>	de hoed.

<i>the cap,</i>	de pet.	<i>the slipper,</i>	de pantoffel.
<i>the bonnet,</i>	de vrouwenhoed.	<i>the heel,</i>	de hak.
<i>the button,</i>	de knoop.	<i>the sole,</i>	de zool.
<i>the button-hole,</i>	het knoopsgat.	<i>the boot-jack,</i>	de laarzenknecht.
<i>the pocket,</i>	de zak.	<i>the stocking,</i>	de kous.
<i>the lining,</i>	de voering.	<i>the garter,</i>	de kousenband.
<i>the waist coat,</i>	het vest.	<i>the shirt,</i>	het hemd.
<i>the cravat,</i>	de das.	<i>the pantaloon,</i>	de broek.
<i>the shoe,</i>	de schoen.	<i>the drawers,</i>	de onderbroek.
<i>the boot,</i>	de laars.	<i>the braces,</i>	de draagbanden.

The tailor has brought your cloak. Button your coat, for it is cold. Where is my hat and my cap? I do not like felt hats, I prefer silk hats. The sleeves of my great coat are too narrow. The lining is not fine. The pockets are full of holes. My sister has lost her bonnet, and my brother has lost his cravat. Those shoes hurt me. The shoemaker has brought your boots. Will you put them on? These boots fit well. I will pull them off; give me the boot-jack. Fetch my pantaloon. Have you found your drawers? Where are my braces? You have not yet put on your stockings. I have lost my garters. Your shirt is not clean. It is my night-shirt. Your cravat has a fine knot. The soles of my slippers are worn out, but the heels are still good.

## 56.

<i>The gown,</i>	de japon.	<i>the handkerchief,</i>	de doek.
<i>the apron,</i>	het voorschoot.	<i>the pocket-hand-</i>	de zakdoek.
<i>the petticoat,</i>	de onderrok.	<i>kerchief,</i>	
<i>the glove,</i>	de handschoen.	<i>the ring,</i>	de ring.
<i>the veil,</i>	de sluijer.	<i>the stick,</i>	de stok.
<i>the muff,</i>	de mof.	<i>the snuff-box,</i>	de snuifdoos.
<i>the necklace,</i>	het halslint.	<i>the pipe,</i>	de pijp.
<i>the umbrella,</i>	de parapluie.	<i>the spectacles,</i>	de bril.
<i>the parasol,</i>	het zonnenscherm.	<i>the purse,</i>	de beurs.
<i>the watch,</i>	het horologie.	<i>the buckle,</i>	de gesp.
	<i>the stays,</i>	het korset.	

I have just bought a pair of gloves for my daughter,

and a handsome watch for my son. This young man wears spectacles. Where have you bought this beautiful ring? My uncle has made me a present of a snuff-box, and a pipe. My cousin has lost his stick. My daughter has dirtied her gown. She has pockets in her apron. Open the umbrella, it begins to rain. Shut your parasol, the sun does no longer shine. If I had my purse about me, we would go and buy a dozen of pocket-handkerchiefs. Where have you bought this beautiful silk handkerchief? That woman wears two petticoats. Your mother does not like stays. She always wears a muff and a veil.

## 57.

Heeft uw vader niet twee groene mantels voor den koetsier gekocht? Ik weet het niet, maar ik zal het vragen. Waar hebt gij deze fraaije das, dien zijden hoed, deze roode laarzen en die wollen kousen gekocht? Bij den jongen koopman, die naast ons huis woont. Waar hebt gij de kousenbanden, de kousen en de mouwen van mijnen jas gebragt? Hebt gij reeds de laarzen gezien, welke de schoenmaker gemaakt heeft? Ik vind de zolen zeer mooi, maar de hakken zijn te hoog. Ik heb een nieuwen bril gekocht, bij den goudsmid, die ook ringen verkoopt. Mijn grootvader heeft eenen stok met een zilveren knop. Wees zoo goed en leen mij uwe parapluie, want het begint te regenen. Ik zal mijn zonnenscherm aan mijne kleine zuster geven, want ik zal een nieuwe koopen. Uwe moeder kocht onlangs een bruinen doek en verkocht al hare zakdoeken. Kent gij de dame, die gisteren haren sluijer in de kerk verloren heeft? Hier is een fraai paar handschoenen.



*Van de spijzen en wat er bij behoort.*

<i>The breakfast,</i>	het ontbijt.	<i>the water,</i>	het water.
<i>the dinner,</i>	het middagmaal.	<i>the wine,</i>	de wijn.
<i>the supper,</i>	het avondmaal.	<i>the sugar,</i>	de suiker.
<i>butter,</i>	boter.	<i>the sugar-basin,</i>	de suikerpot.
<i>bread,</i>	brood.	<i>the coffee-pot,</i>	de koffijkan.
<i>flour,</i>	meel.	<i>the cup,</i>	het kopje.
<i>an egg,</i>	een ei.	<i>the saucer,</i>	het schoteltje.
<i>the coffee,</i>	de koffij.	<i>the tea-tray,</i>	het theeblad.
<i>the tea,</i>	de thee.	<i>the glass,</i>	het glas.
<i>the milk,</i>	de melk.	<i>liquor, beverage,</i>	drank.

I am hungry, is my breakfast ready? Bring us the coffee. I do not like tea, it hurts the breast. I prefer chocolate; it is said to be very nutritive. There is bread and butter. You have forgotten the sugar. I beg your pardon, the sugar-basin is on the table. Will you take any milk? I drink my coffee without milk. I shall eat a couple of eggs. Where have you bought this coffee-pot and these cups? My mother has lately sent me a dozen of these cups, together with a magnificent tea-tray. I beg you to give me a glass of water. I will bring you a whole bottle full of water. But do you not like to take a glass of wine with your dinner? I am used to drink sugar-water. Strong liquors are prejudicial to health.

<i>The table-cloth,</i>	het tafellaken.	<i>vinegar,</i>	azijn.
<i>the napkin,</i>	het servet.	<i>oil,</i>	olie.
<i>the plate,</i>	het bord.	<i>soup,</i>	soep.
<i>the dish,</i>	de schotel.	<i>meat,</i>	vleesch.
<i>the fork,</i>	de vork.	<i>beef,</i>	ossenvleesch.
<i>the knife,</i>	het mes.	<i>roast beef,</i>	gebraden vleesch.
<i>the spoon,</i>	de lepel.	<i>veal,</i>	kalfsvleesch.
<i>pepper,</i>	peper.	<i>mutton,</i>	schapenvleesch.
<i>salt,</i>	zout.	<i>cauliflower,</i>	bloemkool.
<i>mustard,</i>	mosterd.	<i>spinage,</i>	spinagie.

<i>beans,</i>	boonen.	<i>lean,</i>	mager.
<i>peas,</i>	erwten.	<i>gravy,</i>	saus.
<i>potatoes,</i>	aardappelen.	<i>the poultry, fowl,</i>	het gevogelte.
		<i>fat,</i>	vet.

Louisa, have you laid the cloth? Yes, mamma, every thing is on the table. I have also rinsed the glasses. There is one knife wanting. You have forgotten the pepper and salt. I do not see the mustard either. The knives and forks are not clean. Take away these dishes and plates. Now serve up the soup. How do you find this beef, my dear friend? It is very juicy, I would thank you for another slice. I know that you are very fond of veal. Do you wish to have some cauliflower or spinage. Here are beans and peas. I am going to carve the roast beef. Do you like fat? Give me some of the lean, if you please. You have got no gravy. Now, let me offer you a piece of this fowl. I thank you, I do not want any more.

Mijne tante drinkt gaarne chocolade, maar ik houd meer van koffij of thee. Geef mij als het u belieft een glas water met veel suiker, want ik ben zeer verkouden. Deze hoedenmaker drinkt elken dag sterken drank. Hoe vele kopjes en schoteltjes hebt gij verleden Dingsdag gekocht? Ik eet thans elken Donderdag erwten met gebraden vleesch, maar mijne zuster houdt meer van aardappelen en kalfsvleesch. Vet vleesch is smakelijk. Wie heeft den zwarten suikerpot gebroken? Al de suiker is op den grond gevallen. Gij moet de koffijkan naar de keuken brengen, want de meid zal ook nog drinken. Deze tuinman verkoopt ook bloemkool. De generaal onthaalde negentig soldaten op spinagie, schapenvleesch en aardappelen met heerlijke saus.

## 61.

*Van het huisraad.*

<i>furniture,</i>	meubels.	<i>the looking-glass,</i>	de spiegel.
<i>an armchair,</i>	een armstoel.	<i>the picture,</i>	het schilderij.
<i>the chair,</i>	de stoel.	<i>an engraving,</i>	eene plaat.
<i>the press,</i>	de kast.	<i>the bed-stead,</i>	een ledikant.
<i>the chest of drawers,</i>	eene latafel.	<i>the curtains,</i>	de gordijnen.
<i>the table,</i>	de tafel.	<i>the stove,</i>	de kagchel.
<i>the toilet,</i>	de kaptafel.	<i>the candlestick,</i>	de kandelaar.
<i>the scrutoire,</i>	de schrijftafel.	<i>the chandeleer,</i>	de armlaker.
<i>the drawer,</i>	de lade.	<i>the snuffers,</i>	de snuiter.
<i>the clock,</i>	de klok.	<i>the carpet,</i>	het tapijt.

I come to see your furniture; I have an apartment to furnish. Do you want mahogany or painted furniture? You find here whatever you can wish for. This furniture, consisting of six arm-chairs, twelve chairs and a sofa is for a parlour. This chest of drawers is well finished. The top is of marble. I also want some tables. Here are dining-tables, card-tables. Have you also got looking-glasses? I have some of all sizes. Do you not want scrutoires, toilets, presses, bed-steads and carpets? I can also sell you engravings in frames, curtains, clocks and chandeleers. I see that you are provided with every thing. I will call on you at another time, and bring you a list of every thing I want.

## 61.

Ik kocht gisteren eenen fraaijen leunstoel voor de zieke grootmoeder van mijnen neef. Waarom hebt gij ook niet eene tafel en eene kagchel gekocht? Het is nog niet koud genoeg voor eene kagchel. Onze meid heeft hare latafel aan hare moeder gezonden. Van wien is die mahonijhouten schrijftafel? Ik geloof dat zij den Heer B. toebehoort. Wilt gij niet eenige schilderijen en platen koopen? Geef

mij den snuiter, want ik kan niet meer zien. Het roode kleed, dat uw vader ontvangen heeft, kost dertig gulden. Dit is zeer goedkoop. Zie in den spiegel; uw neus is geheel zwart. Wat hebt gij gedaan? Ik heb met zwart krijt geteekend.

## 62.

*Van de Bloedverwantschap.*

<i>The husband,</i>	de man.	<i>the sister-in-law,</i>	de schoonzuster.
<i>the wife,</i>	de vrouw.	<i>the grandson,</i>	de kleinzoon.
<i>the father,</i>	de vader.	<i>the grand-daughter,</i>	de kleindochter.
<i>the mother,</i>	de moeder.	<i>the god-father,</i>	de peet.
<i>the grandfather,</i>	de grootvader.	<i>the god-son,</i>	het petekind.
<i>the grandmother,</i>	de grootmoeder.	<i>the widower,</i>	de weduwnaar.
<i>the nephew,</i>	de neef.	<i>the widow,</i>	de weduwe.
<i>the niece,</i>	de nicht.	<i>the guardian,</i>	de voogd.
<i>the father-in-law,</i>	de schoonvader.	<i>the relation,</i>	de bloedverwant.
<i>the mother-in-law,</i>	de schoonmoeder.	<i>the cousin,</i>	de neef.
		<i>der. the eldest,</i>	de oudste.
<i>the brother-in-law,</i>	de zwager.	<i>the youngest,</i>	de jongste.

How old are you? I am only twenty nine years old. I have still got my father and mother. My grand-father died last year, but my grand-mother is still living. This youth is my youngest brother, and Mistress S. is my eldest sister. Mr. N. is my husband's brother, and consequently my brother-in-law. Those two ladies are my sisters-in-law. That gentleman is my father-in-law, I have married his daughter. Are you related to Mr. Nollet? Yes, we are cousins. That little boy is my god-son; I am his god-father. That little girl is my niece; I am her uncle. My aunt has but one daughter. You know that little girl, she is my cousin. Is your aunt a widow? Yes, Sir, her husband died four years ago.

## Van de ambachten.

<i>The baker,</i>	de bakker.	<i>the bricklayer,</i>	de metselaar.
<i>the miller,</i>	de molenaar.	<i>the tiler,</i>	de dakdekker.
<i>the butcher,</i>	de slager.	<i>the copper-smith,</i>	de koperslager.
<i>the brewer,</i>	de brouwer.	<i>the cooper,</i>	de kuiper.
<i>the tailor,</i>	de kleermaker.	<i>the turner,</i>	de draaijer.
<i>the shoemaker,</i>	de schoenmaker.	<i>the bookbinder,</i>	de boekbinder.
<i>the hatter,</i>	de hoedenmaker.	<i>the tanner,</i>	de looijer.
<i>the furrier,</i>	de bontwerker.	<i>the printer,</i>	de drukker.
<i>the smith,</i>	de smid.	<i>the dier,</i>	de verwer.
<i>the farrier,</i>	de hoefsmid.	<i>the weaver,</i>	de wever.
<i>the tin-man,</i>	de blikslager.	<i>the chandler,</i>	de kaarsenmaker.
<i>the glazier,</i>	de glazenmaker.	<i>the cutler,</i>	de messenmaker.
<i>the joiner,</i>	de schrijnwerker.	<i>the haberdasher,</i>	de kramer.
		<i>the carpenter,</i>	de timmerman.

The baker bakes bread. The butcher kills oxen, calves and muttens. The brewer brews beer. The coppersmith makes and sells kettles, pots and other kitchen utensils. The chandler makes candles. The cutler makes and sells knives, scissors, razors, penknives. The farrier shoes horses. The carpenter makes doors, windows, stairs. The joiner makes tables, chairs, presses. The haberdasher sells thread, needles, pins, tape. The miller grinds corn. The furrier sells fur. The book-binder binds books. The glazier puts glass into the windows. The cooper makes and repairs casks. The shoemaker makes shoes, boots and slippers.

Mijn neef en mijne nicht hebben bij den armen schoenmaker schoenen en laarzen gekocht. De schoonzuster van den rijken hoedenmaker heeft twintig kaarsen bij den kaarsenmaker gekocht. De weduwe van den koperslager gaf ons ketels en potten. De kleinzoon van den drukker

vertrekt morgen met den oom van den kuiper. De vrouw van onzen molenaar is gisteren gestorven. De kleindochter van den bakker was verleden maand zeer ziek; nu is zij beter. Mijn oudste zoon en mijne oudste dochter wonen te zamen bij den hoefsmid van dit dorp. Waar woont de voogd van den jongen bontwerker? Ik weet het niet. Weet gij het? Wij weten het ook niet.

## Van een huis.

<i>The house,</i>	het huis.	<i>the ceiling,</i>	de zoldering.
<i>the ground-floor,</i>	de onderste verdieping.	<i>the floor,</i>	de houten vloer.
		<i>the chimney,</i>	de schoorsteen.
<i>the story,</i>	de verdieping.	<i>the kitchen,</i>	de keuken.
<i>the door,</i>	de deur.	<i>the pantry,</i>	de provisiekamer.
<i>the gate-way,</i>	de koetspoort.	<i>the garret,</i>	de zolder.
<i>the stairs,</i>	de trap.	<i>the roof,</i>	het dak.
<i>the steps,</i>	de treden.	<i>the yard,</i>	de plaats.
<i>the parlour,</i>	de woonkamer.	<i>the stable,</i>	de stal.
<i>the drawing-room,</i>	de gezelschapskamer.	<i>the wood-house,</i>	de schuur.
		<i>the coach-house,</i>	het koetshuis.
<i>the room,</i>	de kamer.	<i>the cellar,</i>	de kelder.
<i>the antichamber,</i>	de voorkamer.	<i>the garden,</i>	de tuin.
<i>the balcony,</i>	het balkon.	<i>the hot-house,</i>	de broeikas.

Is this house to be sold? Yes, sir; I will show it you, if you please. It is let just now. How many ledgers have you got? We have but two; the one inhabits the ground-floor, the other the third story. Let us first see the lower part. I see that this house has two yards. The first is square and very neat. In the second there are the stable, coach-house and several wood-houses. The house is built of free-stone and the roofs are covered with slate. Where is the principal stair-case? Here, sir. The steps are very commodious. Here is the antichamber. Almost all the doors are folding-doors like this. This here is the dining-room with a balcony. The drawing-room is very

elegant. Here are the bed-rooms and the parlour. There is not a single chimney that smokes. The kitchen, the pantry, every thing is neat and provided with presses. Are the cellars fine? Yes, they are fine and deep. The garrets are very spacious. There is also a very beautiful garden, which I must show you. I will see it, when I come back with my architect.

66.

*Van den tijd.*

<i>Sunday</i> ,	Zondag.	<i>Winter</i> ,	winter.
<i>Monday</i> ,	Maandag.	<i>Januarij</i> ,	Januarij.
<i>Tuesday</i> ,	Dingsdag.	<i>Februarij</i> ,	Februarij.
<i>Wednesday</i> ,	Woensdag.	<i>March</i> ,	Maart.
<i>Thursday</i> ,	Donderdag.	<i>April</i> ,	April.
<i>Friday</i> ,	Vrijdag.	<i>May</i> ,	Mei.
<i>Saturday</i> ,	Zaturdag.	<i>June</i> ,	Junij.
<i>a holiday</i> ,	een feestdag.	<i>July</i> ,	Julij.
<i>a working-day</i> ,	een werkdag.	<i>August</i> ,	Augustus.
<i>the season</i> ,	het jaargetijde.	<i>September</i> ,	September.
<i>Spring</i> ,	lente.	<i>October</i> ,	October.
<i>Summer</i> ,	zomer.	<i>November</i> ,	November.
<i>Autumn</i> ,	herfst.	<i>December</i> ,	December.

To-day I have been at my uncle's garden To-morrow we shall go into the country, and the day after to-morrow we shall set out for Brussels. My brother arrived monday last. Our holidays will begin tuesday or wednesday. What day of the week is this? It is thursday. Friday is the sixth day of the week. Saturday is the sabbath of the jews. Spring begins on the twenty first of March. January and February are commonly very cold. April and May are more pleasant. The month of June has only thirty days, but the month of July has thirty one. August is the eighth month of the year. Autumn is with us the most pleasant season. The winter has been very

cold. Next week we shall have a holiday. Sunday next will be the first of June, monday will be the second, and tuesday the third. My uncle will arrive on the fifteenth and will set out on the twenty fifth.

67.

*Van de feesten.*

<i>New-year's day</i> ,	nieuwjaarsdag.	<i>good-friday</i> ,	goede Vrijdag.
<i>twelfth-day</i> ,	drie koningen.	<i>the passion-week</i> ,	de lijdensweek.
<i>carnival</i> ,	karnaval.	<i>easter</i> ,	paschen.
<i>shrove-tide</i> ,	vasten-avond.	<i>holy-thursday</i> ,	hemelvaartsdag.
<i>lent</i> ,	de vasten.	<i>whitsuntide</i> ,	pinksterfeest.
<i>ash-wednesday</i> ,	aschdag.	<i>all-saints-day</i> ,	allerheiligen.
<i>palm-sunday</i> ,	palm-zondag.	<i>christmas</i> ,	kersfeest.
<i>maundy-thursday</i> ,	witte donderdag.	<i>christmas-eve</i> ,	kersavond.

On new-year's-day one makes oftentimes presents to one's friends. Twelfth-day is on the sixth of January. Carnival begins on twelfth-day and ends on ash-wednesday. Lent lasts forty six days, between shrove-tide and easter-sunday. Palm-sunday is the sunday before easter. The thursday of the passion-week is called maundy-thursday. Good friday is consecrated to the remembrance of the passion of our Lord. Holy-thursday is forty days after easter. Whitsuntide is the festival which the church celebrates in commemoration of the Holy-Ghost's descending upon the apostles. All-saints-day is always celebrated by the catholics on the first of November. Christmas is one of the four great festivals of the year. Christmas-eve is on the twenty fourth of December.

68.

Waar woont de koopman B.? Hij woont op de eerste verdieping van het tweede huis aan uwe regterhand. Wanneer gij het koetshuis doorgaat, zeg dan aan den koetsier dat hij den stal moet schoonmaken. De koetsier is op den

zolder of in de schuur, dus zal ik hem niet spreken. De kleine jongen krom op het dak en wierp eenige steenen op de plaats. Wilt gij uwe bloemen niet op het balkon plaatsen? De zon schijnt zoo heerlijk. Zeg aan den timmerman dat hij bij mij kome; want mijne huiskamer heeft eenige herstellingen noodig. Ik zal u eens mededeelen wat ik de volgende week moet doen: Maandag vertrek ik naar Rotterdam, waar ik Dingsdag en Woensdag blijf; Donderdag moet ik met eenen vriend spreken, die te 's Gravenhage woont; Vrijdag vier ik den verjaardag mijns broeders te Haarlem, en Zaturdag kom ik weder te Amsterdam. De lente is aangenamer dan de winter. Januarij is eene koude maand. Mijne zuster vertrekt in Junij of Augustus. Is het niet overmorgen nieuwjaarsdag? Wel zeker, en zes dagen later is het driekoningen. Het kan soms met paschen nog zeer koud zijn. Mijn neef stierf op den eersten kersdag.

## 69.

*Van de bloemen.*

<i>a flower,</i>	eene bloem.	<i>the daisy,</i>	het maagdeliefje.
<i>a corn-flower,</i>	eene koornbloem.	<i>the lily,</i>	de lelie.
<i>a poppy-rose,</i>	eene klaproos.	<i>the pink,</i>	de anjelier.
<i>camomile,</i>	kamillen.	<i>the snow-drop,</i>	het sneeuwkllokje.
<i>forget-me-not,</i>	vergeet-mij-niet.	<i>the rose,</i>	de roos.
<i>the stock-gilliflower,</i>	de violier.	<i>the tulipe,</i>	de tulp.
<i>lily-convallies,</i>	lelie der dalen.	<i>the violet,</i>	het viooltje.
<i>the hyacinth,</i>	de hyacint.	<i>the ranunculus,</i>	de ranonkel.
	<i>the turnsol,</i>		de zonnebloem.

The daisy is a small white or red flower that comes at the beginning of spring. The camomile is an odoriferous plant, and often used in medecine. The red or simple poppy-rose grows among corn. The hyacinth is cultivated for the elegance and sweet odour of its flower. The lily is the symbol of purity and innocence. The vio-

let commonly grows in solitary and shadowy places. You have got there a fine stock-gilliflower. There are simple, double and striped pinks. The forget-me-not is of the genus of labial plants. The snow-drop is a small plant with white flowers, thus called because it blooms in winter.

## 70.

Wij gaan heden in den tuin uws grootvaders en zullen aldaar rozen, tulpen, vergeet-mij-nietjes en maagdeliefjes plukken. Gij moet het echter eerst den tuinman vragen, of gij die bloemen plukken moogt. Wel zeker, hij heeft het ons veroorloofd. Gisteren nog gaf hij ons een schoonen ruiker van klapprozen, anjelieren, leliën van dalen en violieren. De sneeuwkllokjes zijn gewoonlijk de eerste bloemen van het jaar; vervolgens komen de viooltjes en maagdeliefjes. Deze zonnebloem is grooter dan die mijns broeders. Ik heb twaalf hyacinten gekocht voor tien stuivers. De kamillen zijn nuttiger dan zij schoon zijn. Hebt gij dezen ruiker geplukt? Gij hebt vergeten er eenige koornbloemen bij te voegen.

## 71.

*Van de dieren.*

<i>the horse,</i>	het paard.	<i>the calf,</i>	het kalf.
<i>the ass,</i>	de ezel.	<i>the sheep,</i>	het schaap (schapen).
<i>the dog,</i>	de hond.	<i>the ram,</i>	de ram.
<i>the cat,</i>	de kat.	<i>the pig,</i>	het zwijn.
<i>the rat,</i>	de rat.	<i>the goat,</i>	de geit.
<i>the mouse,</i>	de muis.	<i>the chamois,</i>	de gems.
<i>mice,</i>	muizen.	<i>the squirrel,</i>	het eekhorentje.
<i>the rabbit,</i>	het konijn.	<i>the beaver,</i>	de bever.
<i>the weasel,</i>	de wezel.	<i>the fox,</i>	de vos.
<i>the urchin,</i>	de egel.	<i>the badger,</i>	de das.
<i>the hare,</i>	de haas.	<i>the wolf,</i>	de wolf.
<i>the stag,</i>	het hert.	<i>the bear,</i>	de beer.
<i>the mole,</i>	de mol.	<i>the lion,</i>	de leeuw.
<i>the ox,</i>	de os.		

<i>the oxen,</i>	de ossen.	<i>the elephant,</i>	de olifant.
<i>the bull,</i>	de stier.	<i>the camel,</i>	de kameel.
<i>the cow,</i>	de koe.	<i>the whale,</i>	de walvisch.
	<i>the bat,</i>	de vleermuis.	

The weasel kills rats and rabbits. The ox draws the plough. The badger digs a kennel. The ram is the male of the sheep. The beaver constructs its own habitation. The chamois is a kind of a wild goat that lives among rocks and mountains. The bat only begins to fly in the evening. The whale is the largest of animals. The dog is the most familiar and the most intelligent of domestic animals. The squirrel is easily to be tamed. The elephant serves itself of its trunk, as if it were a hand. The urchin rolls itself up if you approach it. The stag has on its head ramified horns which fall off every year. The bear lives in mountains and woods.

## 72.

## Vervolg.

<i>a bird,</i>	een vogel.	<i>the canary-bird,</i>	de kanarienvogel.
<i>the cock,</i>	de haan.	<i>a siskin,</i>	een seisje.
<i>the hen,</i>	de hen, kip.	<i>a green-finch,</i>	eene dinstelvink.
<i>chickens,</i>	kuikens.	<i>a titmouse,</i>	eene mees.
<i>a goose,</i>	eene gans.	<i>a swallow,</i>	eene zwaluw.
<i>geese,</i>	ganzen.	<i>a sparrow,</i>	eene musch.
<i>a duck,</i>	eene eend.	<i>a mag-pye,</i>	eene ekster.
<i>a pigeon,</i>	eene duif.	<i>a raven,</i>	een raaf.
<i>a turtle-dove,</i>	eene tortelduif.	<i>the owl,</i>	de uil.
<i>a peacock,</i>	een paard.	<i>the cuckoo,</i>	de koekoek.
<i>a snipe,</i>	een snip.	<i>the parrot,</i>	de papegaai.
<i>a black-bird,</i>	een merel.	<i>the sparrow-hawk,</i>	de sperwer.
<i>a lark,</i>	eene leeuwerik.	<i>the stork,</i>	de ooijevaar.
<i>the nightingale,</i>	de nachtegaal.	<i>the eagle,</i>	de arend.
	<i>the hawk,</i>	de valk, havik.	

The snipe is a bird of passage. The sparrow-hawk is a bird of prey. The goose is a waterfowl. The green finch has a pretty warbling. The screech of the owl is

very disagreeable. The stork makes its nest on the tops of houses. The cuckoo makes no nest, but puts its eggs into that of other birds. The hawk's eyes are extremely piercing. The swallow announces spring. The titmouse is remarkable for its elegant form and its variegated plumage. The sparrow likes to make its nest in the holes of walls. Parrots are long-lived. The mag-pye learns to imitate the language of man. The hen gathers her young ones under her wings. Turtle-doves commonly fly by couples, the male and female.

## 73.

Mijn neef is bang voor eenen stier. Bind de koe vast, anders loopt zij weg. De herder van dit dorp heeft twintig schapen, twee rammen en verscheidene geiten. Ik heb nog nooit eene levende gems gezien. Holland heeft vele konijnen en hazen. Honden zijn geene vrienden met katten. Gellert vertelde eene schoone fabel van eenen rooden ezel. De mol leeft bijna altijd onder den grond. Het eekhorentje zat op den lindenboom voor ons huis. De bevers zijn nuttiger dan vossen. Er zijn nog wel wolven in Europa. In Italië, Zwitserland, Polen en Rusland houden zich nog beeren op. Ik heb gisteren eenen grooten olifant gezien, in gezelschap van een kameel. De vleermuis is niet zoo schadelijk als gij denkt; zij vangt vele lastige vliegen en muggen. De boer verkocht ons eenen haan en twaalf kippen; mijne moeder wilde ook ganzen en eenden hebben, maar hij had ze niet. De schoonheid der pauw bestaat vooral in haren staart. Kent gij den vogel, die altijd zijn eigen naam noemt? Is het niet de koekoek? Arenden, sperwers, valken en uilen zijn roofvogels. De ekster vloog in onzen tuin. De nachtegaal zingt slechts eenige weken. Hoeveel kost deze tortelduif, die distelvink en dat seisje? Ik weet den prijs niet.

## Van de ziekten en gebreken.

<i>a blind man</i> ,	een blinde.	<i>rheum</i> ,	verkoudheid.
<i>a deaf man</i> ,	een doove.	<i>the looseness</i> ,	de buikloop.
<i>a one eyed person</i> ,	een eenoogige.	<i>the dysentery</i> ,	de roode loop.
<i>a dumb</i> ,	een stomme.	<i>the falling sickness</i> ,	de vallende ziekte.
<i>a hunch-back</i> ,	een gebogchelde.		
<i>a stammerer</i> ,	een stamelaar.	<i>an apoplexy</i> ,	eene beroerte.
<i>freckles</i> ,	sproeten.	<i>the fever</i> ,	de koorts.
<i>a wound</i> ,	eene wond.	<i>a shivering</i> ,	eene rilling.
<i>a cough</i> ,	eene verkoudheid.	<i>the dropsy</i> ,	de waterzucht.
		<i>the gangrene</i> ;	het koudvuur.
<i>the hooping-cough</i> ,	de kinkhoest.	<i>the gout</i> ,	de jicht.
<i>the measles</i> ,	de mazelen.	<i>a scratch</i> ,	eene krab.

That man is a stammerer. That woman is one eyed. My tailor is a hunch-back. My neighbour has had a fit of apoplexy. My uncle died of the dropsy. The measles are a contagious sickness. The hooping-cough is some-times epidemical. Unripe fruit will cause a looseness. A shivering is the fore-runner of a fever. I have got a scratch. My friend has got a rheum. He does nothing but cough; his cough annoys him very much. This little girl's face is covered with freckles. The gardener has a wound in his leg.

## Van de hemelverschijningen.

<i>heaven</i> ,	de hemel.	<i>water</i> ,	water.
<i>the sky</i> ,	de lucht, het uitspansel.	<i>the deluge</i> ,	de zondvloed.
		<i>an inundation</i> ,	een overstrooming.
<i>a star</i> ,	eene ster.		
<i>a planet</i> ,	eene planeet.	<i>an overflowing</i> ,	eene watervloed.
<i>a comet</i> ,	eene komeet.	<i>the wind</i> ,	de wind.
<i>the sun</i> ,	de zon.	<i>the south</i> ,	het zuiden.
<i>the moon</i> ,	de maan.	<i>the north</i> ,	het noorden.
<i>the eclipse</i> ,	de verduistering.	<i>the east</i> ,	het oosten.
<i>the air</i> ,	de lucht.	<i>the west</i> ,	het westen.

The astronomer calculates the motion of the stars. Astrologers attributed to the planets an influence on human destinies. The sun rises and sets. The moon is the satellite of the earth. I like to take a walk by moon-shine. The populace believes that the comets are forebodings of disastrous events. This year we shall have two eclipses of the sun. Air is lighter than water. The air produces and nourishes vegetables. Have you seen the ebb and flood of the sea? The deluge covered all the earth, and all mankind perished by it, except Noah and his family. Periodical inundations fertilize Egypt. The principal winds are: the north-wind, the south-wind, the east-wind and the west-wind.

Ik heb reeds sedert veertien dagen de koorts; de doctor heeft gezegd dat ik naar buiten moet gaan. Mijne drie kinderen hebben verleden zomer de mazelen gehad en mijn oudste zoon heeft nog de kinkhoest. Die arme jongen! Wat zegt de doctor? Het zal wel beter worden. De schoenmaker van uwen vriend is stom en doof. Heden schijnt de zon niet, het is regenachtig weder. Herinnert gij u nog de overstroming welke zoovele menschen ongelukkig heeft gemaakt? Kunt gij de sterren tellen, die men elken avond aan den hemel ziet? De maan is veel kleiner dan de zon. Deze tuinman heeft reeds sedert tien maanden de jicht. Uw oom is aan eene beroerte gestorven. Deze kinderen hadden eertijds het aangezicht vol sproeten.

## Vervolg.

<i>a whirl-wind</i> ,	een dwarlwind.	<i>the ice</i> ,	het ijs.
<i>an earth-quake</i> ,	eene aardbeving.	<i>the snow</i> ,	de sneeuw.
<i>the rain</i> ,	de regen.	<i>the hail</i> ,	de hagel.

<i>the cloud</i> ,	de wolk.	<i>cold</i> ,	koude.
<i>the fog</i> ,	de nevel.	<i>heat</i> ,	warmte.
<i>the thunderstorm</i> ,	het onweder.	<i>jack in a lantern</i> ,	dwaallicht.
<i>a storm</i> ,	een storm.	<i>a meteor</i> ,	een luchtverschijnsel.
<i>the thunder</i> ,	de donder.	<i>the aurora bore-</i>	het noorderlicht.
<i>the lightning</i> ,	de bliksem.	<i>alis</i> ,	
<i>the sheet-lightning</i> ,	het weerlicht.	<i>the galaxy</i> ,	de melkweg.

The whirlwind has caused great damages. The storm has caused great devastations in the province. That town has been destroyed by an earth-quake. The thunder begins to roar. A thunderstorm is coming on. Lightning generally strikes the most elevated spots. A thick fog covers the town and harbour. Did you see the lightning last night? The thermometer shows twenty degrees of heat. It is new-moon. When will the moon be at full? The east is that quarter of the sky when the sun rises. Jack in a lantern is a kind of meteor, that sometimes shows itself in swampy places. Aurora borealis is a luminous phenomenon, which during the night sometimes appears in the sky towards the north. The galaxy or milky way consists of an innumerable multitude of stars.

## 78.

*Land en water.*

<i>Europe</i> ,	Europa.	<i>Italy</i> ,	Italië.
<i>Africa</i> ,	Afrika.	<i>the Netherlands</i> ,	de Nederlanden.
<i>Asia</i> ,	Azië.	<i>Prussia</i> ,	Pruissen.
<i>America</i> ,	Amerika.	<i>Saxony</i> ,	Saksen.
<i>Germany</i> ,	Duitschland.	<i>Poland</i> ,	Polen.
<i>England</i> ,	Engeland.	<i>Russia</i> ,	Rusland.
<i>Austria</i> ,	Oostenrijk.	<i>Sweden</i> ,	Zweden.
<i>Bohemia</i> ,	Bohemen.	<i>Norway</i> ,	Noorwegen.
<i>Bavaria</i> ,	Beijeren.	<i>Switzerland</i> ,	Zwitserland.
<i>France</i> ,	Frankrijk.	<i>Turkey</i> ,	Turkije.
<i>Spain</i> ,	Spanje.	<i>Egypt</i> ,	Egypte.
<i>Livonia</i> ,	Lijfland.	<i>Ethiopia</i> ,	Ethiopië.
		<i>Persia</i> ,	Persië.

Paris is the capital of France. Germany is situated in the middle of Europe. The island of Cyprus produces excellent wine. Spain is divided into fourteen provinces, most of which are called kingdoms. Livonia has many forests and good pasture-grounds. The cathedral of Strassbourg is one of the finest of Europe. Switzerland is divided into cantons. Ethiopia is intersected by numerous chains of lofty and steep mountains. In Bohemia there are mines of silver, tin and lead. America was discovered by Christopher Columbus. The climate of England is very inconstant. Egypt owes its fertility to the Nile. Amsterdam is the capital of the Netherlands.

## 79.

*Vervolg.*

<i>The Ocean</i> ,	de Oceaan.	<i>the Caspian sea</i> ,	de Kaspische zee.
<i>the Mediterranean</i> ,	de Middellandsche zee.	<i>the lake of Constance</i> ,	de Bodensee.
<i>the Adriatic</i> ,	de Adriatische zee.	<i>the Rhine</i> ,	de Rijn.
		<i>the Danube</i> ,	de Donau.
		<i>the Scheld</i> ,	de Schelde.
<i>the Black sea</i> ,	de Zwarte zee.	<i>the Thames</i> ,	de Theems.
<i>the Atlantic</i> ,	de Atlantische Oceaan.	<i>the Maese</i> ,	de Maas.
		<i>the Moselle</i> ,	de Moezel.
<i>the Baltic</i> ,	de Oostzee.	<i>the Vistula</i> .	de Weichsel.

The ocean is the whole extent of water that surrounds the earth. The Mediterranean communicates with the ocean by the straits of Gibraltar. The Adriatic sea is situated between Italy and Dalmatia. The Atlantic is situated between America, Europe and Africa. The North-sea is that part of the Ocean that is situated between Germany, Holland, England, Denmark and Norway. The Caspian sea has no visible connexion with the other seas. The Rhine flows through the lake of Constance in all its length. The Danube has its sources in the Black-forest. The Scheld flows into the North-sea. The Maese abounds in fish. The



Thames is the principal river of England. Warsaw lies on the Vistula.

Hoeveel werelddeelen zijn er? Vijf: Europa, Azie, Afrika, Amerika en Australie. Duitschland is verdeeld in koninkrijken, vorstendommen en hertogdommen. Oostenrijk is een keizerrijk. Napoleon III is thans keizer van Frankrijk. Madrid is de hoofdstad van Spanje. Noorwegen wordt genoemd het land van berg en vloed. Mijn broeder vertrekt morgen met zijn schip naar de Middellandsche Zee. De Zwarte Zee was onlangs nog het tooneel van den oorlog. Het eiland Gothenburg ligt in de Oostzee. Keulen, Dusseldorf, Wezel, Bonn, Arnhem en eenige andere steden liggen aan den Rijn. Warschau is de hoofdstad van Polen. Noorwegen en Zweden is één koninkrijk.

## Tweede Afdeeling.

### GESPREKKEN.

#### 1.

*William and James.*

William. Will you come along with me?

James. Where do you intend to go?

W. To B. My parents are there, and expect me to join them.

J. With all my heart, if my mother consents to it.

W. Go quick and ask her permission. My parents have got a carriage, we shall come back in it.

J. So much the better. But why have you not immediately accompanied them?

W. Because I had not yet finished my task.

J. So than they told you to stay at home, in order to punish you.

W. Not in the least. I never go out and amuse myself, unless I have done my duty.

J. Wait an instant for me. I shall be back in a minute.

#### 2.

W. Well?

J. Oh, I was quite sure that my mother would permit me to go. She knows that I am in good company.

W. But how will we amuse ourselves at B.  
 J. I will tell you what we will do. We will play at nine pins.  
 W. I am very fond of nine pins.  
 J. It is such a pleasure to see the skittles fall to the right and left.  
 W. There my parents are coming. Let us join them.

## 3.

*Richard and Lewis.*

Richard. How did you get this pretty little dog?  
 Lewis. My cousin Henry has given it me.  
 R. How pretty it is! Is it not a little spaniel?  
 L. No, it is a lap-dog.  
 R. What is its name?  
 L. Sprightly.  
 R. It deserves that name: it does nothing but jump and caper.  
 L. It does nothing but play all day long. It will sometimes make you laugh. You should see it with our kitten.  
 R. It seems to be docile. Will you not teach it some tricks, when it is bigger?  
 L. Oh to be sure. I intend to teach it to fetch and carry and to give its paw.

## 4.

R. Is it a dog or a bitch?  
 L. I believe it is a bitch.  
 R. So much the worse.  
 L. Why so much the worse? If it is a bitch, I shall have puppies at the end of a year.  
 R. That you will; but you shall not be able to bring them all up.

L. Oh, I will give them to my friends. Will you have one? I promise you the most beautiful.  
 R. You will greatly oblige me. But it must be a male!  
 L. Just as you like.  
 R. Will you not get Sprightly shorn?  
 L. To be sure, I will. But it is still too cold. I will still wait a few weeks.

## 5.

*William and Thomas.*

William. Will you mend my pen?  
 Thomas. What is the matter with it?  
 W. I believe the slit is too short. It is not well nibbed. It is too hard.  
 T. Let me see. You are in the right: it is good for nothing. I will mend it, if I have my penknife about me.  
 W. Here is one, if you have not got yours. But I believe it does not cut.  
 T. We can sharpen it. But have you got no other pen? It is impossible to mend this. It is too bad.  
 W. I have no other. My papa will give me a better to-morrow.

## 6.

T. Have you already folded your paper?  
 W. Yes, I have made a writing-book. But I cannot write without lines.  
 T. I will rule a page for you. Where is your ruler and your lead-pencil?  
 W. Here they are both. Pray write the first line for me.  
 T. With all my heart. Is your ink very black?  
 W. It is excellent. There is also some sand in the sand-box.

T. I never use sand. I like better a sheet of blotting-paper.

W. Take care not to make a blot.

T. The paper does not carry the ink. What does it cost?

W. Nine pence a quire.

T. That is very dear. I would not give six pence for it. Have you cut it?

W. No, it was already cut, when I bought it.

7.

*Sophia and Louisa.*

Sophia. Where are you going so fast, Louisa?

Louisa. I am going to buy something. Mamma wants a few yards of fine rose ribbon. Cannot you tell me, where I can buy some?

S. Nobody has a better choice of ribbons than Mr. Robert. They are beautiful and not dear.

L. Well then, come along with me. You will help me to choose and bargain.

S. Very willingly, if it does not keep us too long.

L. Are you then in such a hurry?

S. I have a message to do.

L. Well, we shall have done in a moment. I will also accompany you another time.

8.

S. Good morning, Mr. Robert. Have you got some fine rose ribbons?

Mr. Rob. To be sure I have, ladies. Here you will find a complete assortment.

L. What does this cost an ell?

Mr. Rob. Twelve pence.

L. You jest, sir. I have bought broader at nine pence.

Mr. Rob. That must be impossible, Miss. You may easily be deceived in the quality. I have also broader ribbons at nine pence. But you will soon perceive the difference.

L. We are in hast, sir. If you can let me have it at ten pence, I will take six yards.

Mr. Rob. Well, miss, take them.

9.

*Edward and Henry.*

Edward. Will you come with me to the garden?

Henry. With all my heart. But I do not trust the weather. The sky begins to be overcast. We shall have a thunder-storm.

E. I wish we may, for the soil wants rain. But I do not believe the weather will change.

H. You will see that it wil rain. Don't you see the thunderstorm gathering at the horizon? The wind is roaring at a distance.

E. I believe you are right. Have you seen the lightning?

H. Do you see those clouds of dust?

E. There, now it is beginning to rain. Heaven, what a shower it is!

H. It is a cloud that bursts.

E. The water will certainly cause great ravages.

10.

*The father, Charles, Martin and Louisa.*

Martin. Do you know, Charles, that we are to take a ride (in a carriage)?

Charles. I do; Louisa has just now told me so. Where are we to go?

M. I don't know. I think papa will take us to N.  
 Ch. I should wish to go there. I am so fond of the delicious grapes that are to be found there.  
 M. And so am I.  
 Ch. At what o'clock shall we set out?  
 M. At three o'clock. Where is Louisa?  
 Ch. Dressing herself. Ha, there is papa.

## 11.

Father. Well, my children are you ready? The carriage is at the door.  
 M. We have only to take our hats, papa.  
 F. Have you put on clean linnen?  
 Ch. To be sure, we have. Pray look, papa, how clean I am.  
 F. So much the better. You will amuse yourselves very much, I hope. Are you not quite happy?  
 M. How can you doubt it, papa?  
 Ch. Shall we really go to N., papa?  
 F. Yes, since I know that you are so very fond of grapes. But where is your sister?  
 M. I have not seen her, since I came home. I am going to call her.

## 12.

M. Louisa, Louisa!  
 L. What do you want with me?  
 M. Papa is waiting for you. We are going to set out.  
 L. Wait a moment. I did not believe it was so late.  
 M. You always keep us waiting. Make haste. If you are not ready within five minutes, we shall set out without you, and you must stay at home.  
 Ch. There is Louisa at last. Now let us step into the carriage.

L. I beg your pardon, papa, for having kept you waiting.  
 F. I know that you had something to do, my daughter. Your brothers were growing impatient. But now let us quickly go down stairs; the coachman is waiting for us.  
 L. Does the carriage hold four seats, papa?  
 F. It does, my child.  
 L. Is it covered? Can it be shut in case of a tempest?  
 F. I believe it can. Martin, can you open the door?  
 M. No, papa, I find it impossible.  
 F. Now it is open. Louisa, sit down on the front-seat.  
 M. But, papa, you know that I cannot go with my back turned towards the horses. It will make me sick.  
 F. We will change places, when we are out of town. Drive on coachman.

## 13.

*William and Lewis.*

William. Is it true, Lewis, that you are to set out to-morrow?  
 Lewis. No, not to-morrow, but this very instant.  
 W. And why are you in such a hurry?  
 L. My father is dangerously ill, and wishes to see me.  
 W. What a misfortune! But I hope he will recover.  
 L. Please to God! My mother is in despair. I have been crying all night.  
 W. Come, do not lose courage. My heart tells me, that your father will recover this time, and that I shall soon see you again.  
 L. I wish to God, it may be so. But there is no great hope! Good bye, William.  
 W. Good bye, dear Lewis. May God preserve your father!

L. I thank you with all my heart.

W. I wish you a happy journey.

## 14.

*William and Ernest.*

William. Do you know, Ernest, that Lewis's father is dying?

Ernest. Alas, I know it but too well! He has had an apoplectic stroke, and all hope is at an end. He is already speechless.

W. Poor Lewis, how I pity him! If his father dies, we shall not see him again. He is said not to leave any fortune to his children.

E. No, he had but his salary to live on. His widow and children are very much to be pitied.

W. Lewis will be obliged to learn a trade.

E. Yes, doubtlessly.

W. That would be a pity, he has good capacities, and excellent dispositions for studying.

E. And all that will be useless to him at present.

W. We are very fortunate still to have our parents.

E. You are right. I every day pray to God to preserve their lives.

## 15.

*James and Richard.*

Richard. Why, James, I am glad I have met you. We are going to have some capital fun this evening, and you must be one of our company.

James. I thank you, Richard, but must beg to be excused at present, as I really wish to be otherwise engaged.

R. Nay, James, you must not refuse; we shall not

be able to make up a proper number for the game without you.

J. Why, if that is your company, which I see farther on, my coming would not increase it, as there are some among them with whom I could not think of playing.

R. Why not? they are most of them quite as smart as either you or I.

J. True; and if not, I should not think of objecting to them on that account.

R. Then they are very good-natured too.

J. It is not their ability, nor their temper; but their character, to which I have an objection.

R. Indeed? I should like to know what fault you can find with the character of either of them; they are quite as respectable as your self.

J. That may be as to their family; but to come at once to the point, there is one among them (you know which I mean) that does not mind swearing.

R. I confess, Sam does swear now and then; but what of that? his swearing will not hurt you. I play with him very often, and I do not swear any the more of that.

J. I know his swearing will not hurt me, while I keep my distance; but I should be very sorry to have a swearer for my companion. I have been taught that *evil communications corrupt good manners,*" and as you mention yourself, you will perhaps recollect, that a few days since I heard you use an expression which you acknowledged you were ashamed of, and which you said you had got you did not know how. Now, I have no doubt that you learnt it of one of your companions, with whom it is quite a favourite.

R. Well, that was only once, and I am not going to

use it again, because I can well understand that it is a bad habit.

J. But will you still for the future play with those boys, who have an bad influence on your character?

R. I believe it would be better, if I did not do it.

J. Well, come and take a walk with me; we shall not want for amusement during our walk.

## 16.

*De vader en Hendrik, zijn zoon.*

Hendrik. Goeden morgen, lieve vader. Hebt gij goed geslapen?

Vader. Goeden morgen, Hendrik. Gij zijt heden morgen vroeg opgestaan.

H. Ja, vader, omdat ik gaarne naar B. wilde om mijnen oom te bezoeken, indien gij het mij veroorlooft.

V. Hoe! moet gij dan niet naar school?

H. Deze week niet, lieve vader, want wij hebben vacantie.

V. Moet gij dan geen vacantiewerk maken?

H. Dat kan ik immers even zoo goed buiten maken, met mijnen neef August.

V. In dit geval wil ik het u wel veroorloven, onder voorwaarde echter dat gij u goed gedraagt.

H. Heb daar geen zorg voor, lieve vader; niemand zal iets over mij te klagen hebben.

## 17.

*De moeder en Hendrik.*

H. Zoude ik nu niet ontbijten mogen, lieve moeder?

M. Ja wel, mijn kind, wij zullen te zamen ontbijten. Heeft vader u veroorloofd naar B. te gaan?

H. Ja, lieve moeder; ik neem mijn vacantiewerk mede.

M. Dat is goed, Hendrik. Groet oom en tante en ook neef August van mij.

H. Dat zal ik niet vergeten.

M. Wees vooral niet wild en onbezonnen en pas op dat gij niet in het water valt.

H. Daarvoor zal ik wel oppassen, moeder, ik zal mijnen tijd met lezen en wandelen doorbrengen.

M. Dat vind ik goed, mijn kind; men moet nooit zijnen tijd verkwisten.

## 18.

*Hendrik en Lodewijk.*

Lodewijk. Hé, goeden morgen, Hendrik! waar gaat gij zoo haastig heen? Gij ziet er uit als een reiziger.

Hendrik. Goeden morgen, Lodewijk. Ik wil mijnen oom te B. bezoeken. Wilt gij met mij mede gaan? Het is zulk schoon weder.

L. Ik zoude wel gaarne medegaan, maar mag niet zonder verlof mijner ouders.

H. Daar hebt gij gelijk aan. Kom, zij zullen u dit genoeg niet ontzeggen; ik wil met u medegaan.

L. Mijne ouders ontzeggen mij nooit iets, indien zij met mij tevreden zijn.

H. Nu, wij zullen zien. Laat ons gaan.

## 19.

*Vervolg.*

L. Hier ben ik, Hendrik; mijne ouders hebben het mij veroorloofd met u mede te gaan.

H. Dat verblijdt mij zeer; wij zullen veel genoeg hebben. Hebt gij alles wat gij noodig hebt?

- L. Ik moet nog mijnen hoed en stok krijgen.  
 H. Neem ook uwe boeken mede, want wij kunnen ons vacantiwerk bij neef August maken.  
 L. Goed, ik zal alles mede nemen.  
 H. Nu zijn wij gereed; laat ons gaan.  
 L. Door welke poort zullen wij uitgaan?  
 H. Door de M. poort.  
 L. Woont uw oom ver van hier?  
 H. Hij woont slechts een half uur van de stad.  
 L. Moeten wij gindschen molen voorbij?  
 H. Ja, en dan die brug over.

20.

*Vervolg.*

- H. Welk heerlijk weder is het!  
 L. Inderdaad, het is schoon weder. Hoe vele bloemen bloeijen daar op het veld!  
 H. Welk een schoone eikenboom! Hoe groen zijn die weiden.  
 L. Aan wien behoort die fraaije buitenplaats, welke wij daar aan onze linkerhand zien?  
 H. Dat is geene buitenplaats; het is de suikerfabriek van den heer S.  
 L. Zoo, woont daar de heer S? Ik heb hem dikwijls bij mijnen vader gezien.  
 H. Hij is, geloof ik, nog jong, maar hij moet door vlijt en spaarzaamheid in korten tijd zeer rijk geworden zijn.  
 L. Ik wenschte ook wel eens zulk een suikerfabriek te bezitten.  
 H. Welligt wenscht gij het slechts om rijk te worden, niet waar? Doch indien men maar wil, kan men door vlijt en goed gedrag in alle zaken vooruitkomen.

21.

- L. Hier zijn wij bij de brug. Hoe ver is het nu nog van B.?  
 H. Nog ongeveer tien minuten. Ziet gij ginds den dorpstoren niet?  
 L. O ja, woont daar uw oom?  
 H. Juist. Straks komen wij aan zijn huis.  
 L. Woont hij nog voor het dorp?  
 H. Ja, het is de eerste buitenplaats aan uwe regterhand. Kunt gij het gebouw niet reeds door de boomen zien?  
 L. Ik zie het zeer duidelijk.  
 H. Nu, dat is het buiten van mijnen oom; wij zijn er haast.  
 L. Is daar ook een vijver, met een schuitje waarin men roeijen kan?  
 H. Ik geloof zelfs twee; kunt gij roeijen?  
 L. Een weinig.

22.

*De vorigen. De oom.*

- H. Goeden morgen, lieve oom! Neef August had mij verzocht eenige dagen bij hem door te brengen.  
 O. Ik weet het en ben zeer blijde u te zien. Zijn uwe ouders nog wel?  
 H. Zij varen zeer wel en moeder laat u hartelijk groeten. Ik heb ook mijn vriend Lodewijk mede gebragt, die gaarne bij ons blijven wil, indien gij het veroorlooft.  
 O. Waarom niet? Gij weet dat ik gaarne zie dat August in de vacantedagen een paar vriendjes bij zich heeft. Wat zal hij blijde zijn!  
 H. Waar is neef August?  
 O. Hij zal dadelijk hier zijn; hij brengt eenen brief

voor mij naar den Heer, die ginds in dat roode huis woont. Daar komt hij.

23.

*Hendrik, Lodewijk, August.*

Aug. Goeden morgen, Hendrik! goeden morgen, Lodewijk! Ik ben blij dat gij gekomen zijt. Gij zijt een man van uw woord, Hendrik. Ik hoop dat wij veel plezier zullen hebben.

H. Dat hoop ik ook, maar wij hebben ook onze boeken medegebragt, om bij u het vacantiwerk te maken.

L. Ik heb echter mijne pennen vergeten.

A. O, dat is niets. Ik heb in mijn lessenaar pennen genoeg. Maar hebt gij reeds ontbeten?

H. en L. Wel zeker. Wij hebben ontbeten voor wij de stad verlieten.

A. Gij hebt eene groote wandeling gedaan en zult dus wel eetlust hebben. Ik zal het aan mama zeggen.

H. Nu als gij het wilt, is het goed. Gij weet dat jongens nooit een boterham afwijzen.

24.

*De vorigen.*

A. Nu zal ik u eens mijne boekenkast laten zien. Ik heb verscheidene nieuwe boeken, die gij nog niet gezien hebt.

H. Dat zal mij aangenaam zijn. Gij weet dat ik gaarne mooie boeken zie.

A. Hier is de nieuwe Robinson met fraaije platen. Wat zegt gij van dat groote boek, hetwelk daar in den hoek staat?

L. Ik geloof dat ik het ook heb. Zijn het niet de gedichten van Tollens?

A. Juist, ik heb ze van mijnen grootvader gekregen op mijn verjaardag.

H. Hebt gij ook reisbeschrijvingen?

A. Wel zeker, die van Mungo Park, Haafner en Bruce.

L. Waar is uwe portefeuille met prenten?

A. Die is in de tuinkamer en wij zullen ze strakjes wel zien.

H. Dat is goed.

25.

A. Laat ons nu eens in den tuin gaan. Hoe vindt gij ons huis, Lodewijk?

L. Ik vind het huis zeer schoon; ik wenschte wel hier altijd te wonen.

A. Nu, als gij lust hebt, kunt gij mij zoo dikwijls bezoeken als gij wilt.

L. Ik hoop dikwijls van uwe uitnoodiging gebruik te maken.

A. Gij zult altijd welkom zijn. Willen wij eens roeijen met het schuitje?

H. Ja, laat ons eens rondom het huis roeijen.

A. Kan Lodewijk roeijen?

H. Neen, maar ik heb beloofd het hem te leeren.

26.

*De vorigen.*

L. Het is toch veel prettiger buiten te zijn, dan in de stad.

A. Dat zeg ik ook, en daarom ben ik blijde dat wij hier wonen.

H. De landlieden zijn veel gelukkiger dan de bewoners der steden.

A. Dat is waar; het leven buiten is veel eenvoudiger

II.



en natuurlijker; men kent de vele verstroojingen niet, die men in de stad vindt.

L. Ik geloof, dat als men eerst aan de stilte van het landelijk leven gewoon is, men dan volstrekt geen lust meer heeft in de stad te wonen.

H. Het doet mij leed dat wij morgen weder vertrekken moeten.

L. Mij ook; maar gelukkig dat er overmorgen weder school is, dan vergeet men het buitenleven wel.

A. Ik hoop dat gij spoedig zult terugkomen. Gij moet uw best doen hier te zijn als de appelen en peren rijp zijn. Dan kunnen wij den geheelen dag plukken. Dat zal een pret wezen!

## B R I E V E N .

1.

Dear mother!

I profit of the first opportunity that offers, to thank you most sincerely for having entrusted me to the care of so respectable a lady as Mrs. Berville. It would be impossible not to be improved by her instructions; she gives them with so much mildness! I want nothing to be perfectly happy, but your agreeable presence; but knowing that it is for my welfare, I endeavour to accustom myself to our separation. However, I hope, the moment will come, that I may see my dearest mother again, and tell her by word of mouth that I shall always be

her dutiful daughter

Caroline.

2.

Dear Caroline!

Your letter, being dictated by your heart, has given me an inexpressible pleasure. I am glad to learn from

Mrs. Berville's letters, that she is satisfied with your progress, and that you devote particular attention to your grammar. There is nothing, that gives more credit to a young lady, than to speak and write her own language correctly.

I hope soon to surprise my dear Caroline by paying her an unexpected visit, and to prove her by some handsome present, that I am

her affectionate mother.

3.

I am at length arrived at London in good health. However, I am sad, very sad. You will say that I am a child; but I cannot conceal from you that I have wept much during my journey. I know how you love me; consequently I must no more speak of it, lest I should afflict you.

You are indeed right to praise Mrs. Berville. She is so gentle and kind, that one cannot help loving her at first sight. She received me in her arms on my arrival, just as you used to do, when you were satisfied with me.

Farewell, dearest mother. Embrace my little sister for me, and be assured that I shall always be

Your most obedient daughter  
Emily.

4.

Your letter, dear Emily, has afforded me the greatest pleasure. The affliction which you feel at our separation, is a proof of your sensible heart. A child that can leave its mother without regret, does not love her. But one must also listen to reason. We cannot always stay to-

gether; and cowardly to give one's self up to grief, is a weakness one ought to be ashamed of. Whenever you are afflicted at no longer being with me, think of the pleasure we shall feel at seeing each other again after a year's separation, and you will immediately feel yourself consoled. Meanwhile let us correspond with each other as frequently as possible. Writing is almost speaking.

Adieu, dear Emily. Give me an account of all your occupations and pleasures. But always write as if you were speaking. A letter must be simple and natural.

I am for ever, dear Emily,

Your affectionate mother.

5.

Dear father and mother!

You have been for some time without any letters from me, and will certainly tax me with negligence. I am, however, not to be blamed; I have been sick, and the fear of causing you unnecessary uneasiness has prevented me from writing. Thank God, I am quite recovered at present. I have been perfectly taken care of here, which made me the more persist in my intention, not to disturb your tranquillity. I have but one wish now, which is, that you may enjoy the same good health I am blessed with, and am with the greatest tenderness

Your obedient son  
Henry.

6.

Dear father!

Your long silence alarms me. Are you sick? Has any

misfortune befallen you, great enough to prevent you from bestowing a few moments on your son, or rather, should I, contrary to my intentions, have had the misfortune of displeasing you? I dare not accuse you of indifference: on the contrary, I know your tenderness towards your family too well, and am too well aware of your solicitude for their welfare. I beseech you, dear father, not to leave me any longer in this cruel suspense, but to write me as soon as possible, and to believe me

Your respectful son.

## 7.

Dearest mother!

Your letter has caused me the greatest grief. How anxious am I to know the result of my tender father's sickness! I shall not have a moment's ease, until a letter from you tells me — and what will it tell me? Alas, why am I not with you! If Heaven grants the wishes of children that love and respect their parents, he will soon restore my father to health, and thus again diffuse joy over his family. Pray, dear mother, communicate these feelings to him and let me soon have some consolatory news.

I am with the greatest respect

Your dutiful son  
Charles.

## 8.

Dear father!

I consider it as my most sacred duty, at the beginning of this year, to assure you again of my highest respect and sincerest gratitude. Accept, then, dear father, of my

most fervent wishes for the continuance of your health and the fulfilment of all your desires. May Heaven preserve your life for the welfare of your family, and render all your days as happy and peaceful as possible! I entreat you to believe, that I shall always endeavour to deserve the continuance of your kindness, and to prove you, by my respect and tenderness, the submission with which I am

Your grateful son  
Thomas.

## 9.

Lieve Caroline!

Ontvang mijnen besten dank voor de schoone bloemen, welke gij mij gezonden hebt. Ik behoef u wel niet te zeggen, dat ik ze terstond in een glas met water gezet heb. Mijn jongste broeder, die zooals gij weet, eerst twee jaar oud is, klapte van vreugde in de hand, toen hij die heerlijke rozen zag. Hij wil ze elk oogenblik in zijne hand hebben, doch dan zouden ze spoedig verwelken. Morgen hoop ik u te zien en zal u alsdan mondeling mijnen dank brengen.

Vaarwel!

Uwe Louize.

## 10.

Lieve Henriette!

Gij hebt mij verleden jaar beloofd zaad te zullen zenden voor verschillende bloemen. Ik herinner u nu aan uwe belofte, wijl het spoedig tijd wordt, dat het zaad moet gezaaid worden, en ik verzoek u dus uwe belofte te vervullen. Aangenaam zal het mij zijn spoedig eenige tijding van u te ontvangen, maar nog liever u binnen kort te zien. Ik ben steeds

Uwe Elize.

11.

Lieve Charlotte!

Ik feliciteer u hartelijk met uw en geboortedag, en wensch dat gij dezen dag nog dikwijls in gezondheid en vreugde moogt beleven.

Neem ook het bijgevoegde geschenk aan als een bewijs der vriendschap van

Uwe vriendin  
Lucie.

12.

Waarde vriend!

Mijn broeder Hendrik is sedert eenige dagen zeer ziek. Hij verzoekt u, hem spoedig, en als het mogelijk ware, nog heden te bezoeken. Ik voeg mijne bede bij de zijne, en hoop dat gij mij helpen zult den zieke een weinig op te vrolijken. Gij kent zoovele mooie geschiedenissen, waarmede gij hem zoowel als mij veel vreugde zult verschaffen. Kom zoo spoedig als het u mogelijk is; wij verwachten u met ongeduld.

Uw vriend  
Gustaaf.

13.

Lieve Julia!

Hiernevens zend ik u het boek terug, dat gij mij geleend hebt, toen ik onlangs bij u was. Ik dank u hartelijk voor uwe goedheid; het heeft mij veel genoeg verschafft en ik heb er veel uit geleerd, dat mij tot nu toe onbekend was. Het zou mij zeer welkom zijn, wanneer gij weder

een ander boek voor mij hadt. Zoek eens in uwe boekenkast wat gij voor mij hebt. Ik ben

Uwe vriendin  
Dorothea.

14.

Lieve broeder!

Ik haast mij u eene blijde tijding mede te deelen. Neef Willem, van wien wij in tien jaren niets gehoord hadden, en dien wij reeds lang dood waanden, is gisteren geheel onverwacht van zijne reis teruggekomen. Hij ziet er heel gezond uit, ofschoon hij zeer oud geworden is. Ik had mij hem geheel anders voorgesteld. Gij zult u nog wel herinneren, hoe dikwijls onze ouders met ons over neef gesproken hebben, en hoe oplettend wij dan toeluisterden, als zij ons zijne lotgevallen vertelden.

Wij verwachten u spoedig hier, want neef heeft ook voor u vele geschenken uit vreemde landen medegebragt. Wees van ons allen gegroet en vooral van

Uwen liefhebbenden broeder.

15.

Lieve August!

Het doet mij leed dat ik woensdag l.l. (*past*) mijn woord niet heb kunnen houden. Ik had beloofd u om één uur te bezoeken en den geheelen namiddag in uw gezelschap door te brengen. Ik moest echter eerst naar mijnen oom, wien ik beloofd had eenige teekeningen te toonen. Maar zoodra ik bij hem kwam, verzocht hij mij met hem en de familie uit rijden te gaan, en toen ik hem zeide, dat ik beloofd had u te bezoeken, gaf hij oogenblikkelijk bevel, dat de meid naar uw huis zoude gaan, om mij in zijnen naam te

verontschuldigen. Ongelukkiglijk heeft de meid hare boodschap vergeten en is dus de oorzaak, dat gij te vergeefs op mij gewacht hebt. Gij zijt zekerlijk boos op mij geweest; maar daar het mijne schuld niet is, hoop ik dat gij niet meer boos zult zijn. Zoodra ik kan, zal ik bij u komen.

Uw vriend.

16.

Hartelijk geliefde moeder!

De gelukkige dag is weder verschenen, dat mijne lieve moeder haren geboortedag viert. Deze dag is voor mij een dag der hoogste vreugde, want meer dan ooit herinner ik mij welke verplichting ik aan u heb. Ja, lieve moeder, ik ben geheel doordrongen van dankbaarheid voor de moederlijke liefde en zorg mij steeds bewezen, en ik bid dat het den Heer moge behagen uw leven nog langen tijd voor uwe kinderen te behouden. Het zal steeds mijn grootste geluk en mijne bestendige vreugde zijn door een goed gedrag u genoeg te verschaffen, en ik zal door vlijt en gehoorzaamheid altijd bewijzen, dat ik steeds ben

Uwe dankbare en gehoorzame dochter  
Pauline.

17.

Mijnheer!

Mijne ouders zijn van plan morgen naar D. te vertrekken, en willen mij gaarne het genoeg doen, mij mede te nemen, mits het met uwe toestemming is. Ik verzoek u derhalve vriendelijk mij te veroorloven eenige dagen uit de school afwezend te zijn, terwijl ik beloof mijn best te zullen doen, om datgene wat ik alsdan verzuimd heb, in

te halen. In de hoop dat mijn verzoek door u zal worden bewilligd, noem ik mij

Uw gehoorzame scholier  
Hendrik.

18.

Lieve Karel!

Het is reeds lang geleden dat gij beloofd hebt mij tegen de lente eens te zullen bezoeken. Wij zijn nu reeds in de maand Mei, dus midden in het voorjaar, en het weder is alle dagen even schoon. Ik herinner u nu aan uwe belofte en verzoek u dus spoedig te komen. Uwe ouders zullen er niets tegen hebben, want toen ik verleden jaar bij u was, hebben zij mij hunne toestemming gegeven. Ik behoef u wel niet te verzekeren, dat gij mijne ouders en mijne broeders en zusters zeer welkom zijt. Meld ons den dag van uwe komst. Ik verwacht u met ongeduld en blijf

Uw trouwe vriend  
Frederik.

## Derde Afdeeling.

### HET BEANTWOORDEN VAN VRAGEN.

1.

#### *The Trèasure.*

A wèalthy old fàrmer, who had for some time declined in his health, percèiving, that he had not màny days to live, càlled his sons toghèther. — » My dear children, said the dying man, I leave it with you, as my last injunct-ion, not to part with the farm, which has been in our fàmily these hùndred years; for, to disclose to you a sè-cret, which I recèived from my fàther, and which I now think pròper to communicatè to you, there is a trèasure hid sòmewhere in the grounds; though I nèver could discòver the particular spot, where it is conceàled. How-èver, as soon as the hàrvest is got in, spare no pains in the search, and, I am well assùred, you will not lose your làbour.” The wise old man was no sòoner laid in his grave, and the time, which he mènioned, arrivèd, than his sons went to work, and, with great vigour and alàcrity, tùrned up agàin and agàin èvery foot of ground;

the cònsequence of which was, althòugh they did not find the òbject of their pursùit, that their lands yielded a far more plèntiful crop, than those of their nèighbours. At the end of the year, when they were sètting their accòunts, and computing their extraòrdinary pròfits: — » I would lay a wàger, said one of the bròthers, that this was the conceàled trèasure, which my fàther meant. I am sure at least, we have found by expèrience, that industry is itself a trèasure.”

1. Why did the rich farmer call his sons?
2. Which secret did he reveal?
3. When must the sons principally seek for the treasure?
4. What did the sons do after their father's death?
5. Did they find the treasure?
6. Had they any profit by it?
7. What did experience teach them?

2.

#### *Virtue rewarded, or the benevolent emperor.*

The Emperor Joseph II was generally stiled the *Titus* of Germany, an appellation which he obtained from the circumstance, that hardly a day past over his head without being distinguished by some act or other, of public munificence or private benevolence.

Soon after his majesty's accession to the throne, an officer of his army died, leaving a wife and daughter wholly unprovided for. The poor widow drew up a memorial by way of petition to the emperor, and confided it to a person about the court, whom she thought her friend, and who promised to present it. But officiousness is seldom sincere. The courtier neglected her suit; and the poor woman had at last disposed of every article of furniture she possessed,

except her bed, to which she was then confined by a fever, brought on by the joint pressure of poverty and anxiety of mind.

In this forlorn situation, the daughter took a solitary walk into one of the suburbs, to be at liberty to indulge her grief alone, imploring Providence to inspire her with some thought or scheme to administer to her poor mother's relief. Providence did meet her in the person of the emperor, then going one of his rounds, who observing her emotion and her tears, ordered his attendants to step aside, and coming up to her, enquired with tenderness the cause of her affliction? She had no suspicion who he was; but judging from the suite she had seen him dismiss, that he must be some person of rank, replied, »Alas! sir, what have such as you to do with the unhappy? Suffer me to pass on—your notice but humbles me the more.” »Believe me, fair maiden,” he rejoined, »it is not curiosity, but compassion, that prompts the question. One must know before they can relieve.” »Know then,” answered she, »that my mother lies now on her death-bed, but suffering more through grief and want than disease. We have lost my father, sir, and with him our only subsistence, which was his pay, having been able to bequeath us nothing but the honour of his name, for he was an officer.”

Here his majesty interrupted her. »Why did you not set forth your case and pretensions to the emperor, to whom it gives pleasure to relieve distress?” »We did so, sir; we drew up a memorial, and were promised to have it delivered, but are certain that it never was, because no notice has been taken of it.” »Make out another, then,” said he, »and bring it to this spot at the same hour to-morrow. I know the emperor, and promise to take charge of it myself. You seem to have some diffidence in

me,” added he; »so take this purse as a pledge of my sincerity, and hasten home to the relief of your afflicted mother.” Before she had time to pour forth the expression of her gratitude, the emperor was gone beyond the reach of hearing. Hastening instantly home to her mother, she related with delighted earnestness the circumstances of her adventure. The languishing invalid, however, being possessed of a quick judgment and some experience, received the account but coldly. She foresaw consequences from this rencontre, that the youthful innocence and filial piety of her daughter could have no suspicion of. »My dear child,” said the widow, »what you seem to look upon now as the earnest of good fortune, may perhaps but tend to the very last degree of our wretchedness. If this money was—Oh, my child! Such is the goodness of certain people—their bounty is but the price of crime. I am not suspecting your virtue in the least, still let us die, my child, but let us die innocent. Touch not a penny of this purse.”

The next morning, at the appointed hour, the daughter repaired to the spot, with the money and the memorial in her hand. His majesty came up to her soon after, when all pale and trembling, she thus addressed him: »There is your purse, sir, and here is our memorial. If that was given us as a snare, we return it again to you untouched; and then, as you can mean nothing with this, I shall carry it back with me unpresented.” »My good girl,” he replied, »your emperor lays snares for no one. Carry back both the purse and your memorial, and call at the Exchequer every quarter-day, for your father's pay, which is already appointed for you, during your mother's life and your own.”

1. How was the emperor commonly called?

2. Did he merit this name?
3. What happened soon after his ascension to the throne?
4. What did the officer's widow?
5. To whom did she confide the petition?
6. What did the courtier?
7. What happened to the widow?
8. Whither went her daughter, and in what intention?
9. Whom did she meet?
10. What conversation had she with the Emperor?
11. What did the Emperor say she must do?
12. What did he give her?
13. What answered the mother as her daughter told her about the interview with the stranger?
14. Did the daughter remain at home?
15. Did she regret having fulfilled the stranger's request?

## 3.

*(De Onderwijzer gelieve van nu af zelf de vragen te stellen, welke de leerling beantwoorden moet.)*

*Abdallah, a tale.*

A dervise, venerable by his age, fell ill in the house of a woman, who had long been a widow, and lived in extreme poverty in the suburbs of Balsora. He was so touched with the care and zeal with which she assisted him, that at his departure he said to her: »I have remarked that you have enough to subsist on alone, but not a sufficiency to maintain yourself and your son the young Abdallah. If you will therefore trust him to my care, I will endeavour to acknowledge in his person the obligation I have to you for your care of me. The good woman

received his proposal with joy, and the dervise departed with the young man, advertising her, that they must perform a journey which would last near two years: as they travelled he kept him in affluence, gave him excellent instructions, and took the same care of him as if he had been his own son.

Abdallah a hundred times testified his gratitude to him for all his bounties; but the old man always answered: »My son, it is by actions that gratitude is proved, we shall see in a proper time and place, whether you are so grateful as you pretend.»

One day, as they continued their travels, they found themselves in a solitary place, when the dervise thus addressed Abdallah: »My son, we are now at the end of our journey; I shall employ prayers to obtain from heaven, that the earth may open, and make an entrance wide enough, to permit thee to descend into a place, where thou will find one of the greatest treasures that the earth incloses in her bowels; hast thou courage to descend into this subterraneous vault?» Abdallah swore to him, he might depend upon his obedience and zeal. Then the dervise read and prayed for some moments, after which the earth opened and the dervise said to him: »Thou mayest now enter, my dear Abdallah, remember that it is in thy power to do me a great service, and that this is perhaps the only opportunity thou canst ever have of testifying to me that thou art not ungrateful: do not let thyself be dazzled by all the riches that thou wilt find there; think only of seizing upon an iron candlestick with twelve branches, that is absolutely necessary to me, then come and bring it to me immediately.» Abdallah promised every thing, and descended boldly into the vault; but forgetting what was expressly told him, while he was filling his vest with gold and jewels, the opening, by



which he had entered, closed of itself; he had however presence of mind enough to seize upon the iron candlestick, which the dervise had so strongly recommended to him. After searching about a great while, he was at last fortunate enough to find a narrow opening, covered over with briars, through which he returned to the light of the sun; he looked on all sides for the dervise, but in vain; he designed to deliver him the iron candlestick he so much wished for, and had formed a design to quit him, being rich enough with what he had taken out of the cavern, to live in affluence without his assistance.

Not perceiving the dervise, he immediately returned to his mother's house, who enquired after the dervise; Abdallah frankly told her what had happened, and what danger he had run to satisfy his unreasonable desires.

## 4.

*Abdallah.*

(Continued.)

Dazzled with the lustre of the treasure, they were projecting a thousand delightful schemes in consequence of them, when, to their great amazement, the whole vanished away in an instant! It was then that Abdallah sincerely reproached himself for his ingratitude, and perceiving that the iron candlestick remained, he reflected upon himself thus: »What has happened to me is just, I have lost that which I had no design to restore and the candlestick which I intended to return to the dervise remains with me.»

At night, without reflecting upon it, he placed a light in the candlestick; immediately they saw a dervise appear, who turned round for an hour, and then disappeared, after having thrown them an asper. Willing to know

the further use of this candlestick, he placed a light in every one of the twelve branches, when twelve dervises appeared; and after turning round and dancing an hour, threw twelve aspens, and disappeared. He repeated every night the same ceremony, which had always the same success. This sum formerly would have made his mother and him happy, but it was not considerable enough to change their fortune. The sight of the riches he believed he should possess had left such traces in the mind of Abdallah as nothing could efface: therefore, finding the small advantage he drew from the candlestick, he resolved to go and restore it to the dervise, the town of whose residence he happened to remember: hoping thereby to obtain again the treasure which had vanished from him.

He was directed to the house where the dervise resided, which had the appearance of a palace: »Certainly," said he, »those of whom I have enquired have directed me wrong, this appears more like the palace of a king, than the habitation of a dervise." He was in this embarrassment, when a servant of the house approached him, and said: »Abdallah, thou art welcome, my master Abounalder has long expected thee." He then conducted him to the dervise, to whom Abdallah presented the candlestick. »Thou art but an ungrateful wretch," said the dervise, »dost thou imagine thou canst impose upon me, who know thy inmost thoughts? If thou hadst known the real value of this candlestick, thou hadst never brought it to me; I will make thee sensible of its true use. Immediately he placed a light in each of the branches; and when the twelve dervises had turned round for some time, he gave each of them a blow with a cane, which in a moment converted them into twelve heaps of gold, diamonds, and other precious stones. But to prove that curiosity only was the motive of his desiring the

candlestick, he showed Abdallah the immense riches which he already possessed, being sufficient to gratify the avarice of the most insatiable miser. The regret of having restored the candlestick, pierced the heart of Abdallah; but Abounalder, not seeming to perceive it, loaded him with caresses, and addressed him thus: » Abdallah, my son, I believe, by what has happened, thou art corrected of that frightful vice of ingratitude; to-morrow thou mayest depart, when thou wilt find at my gate ready to attend thee, a horse, a slave, and two camels laden with riches, all which I make thee a present of." Abdallah said to him all that a heart sensible of avarice could express when its passion was gratified.

## 5.

*Abdallah.*

(Continued)

Abdallah, during the whole night could think of nothing but the candlestick. » Abounalder," said he to himself, » without me he had never been the possessor of it; why should he enjoy this treasure of treasures, because I had the probity or folly to bring it back to him? He gives me two camels laden with gold and jewels, when the candlestick, in one moment, would furnish me with ten times as much; it is Abounalder who is ungrateful; what wrong shall I do him in taking this candlestick? certainly none, for he is rich enough without it in all conscience." The thing was not difficult, he knew where it was placed, arose soon in the morning, and privately hid it in the bottom of one of the sacks, filling it up with gold and jewels, which he was allowed to take, and loading it with the rest upon his camels, he hastily bid Abou-

nalder adieu, and departed with his horse, slave and two camels.

When he was within a few day's journey of Balsora, he sold his slave, and hired another, resolving not to have any witness of the source of his riches. He arrived without any obstacle at his mother's, whom he would scarce look upon, so much was he taken up with the treasure. His first care was to place the loads of his camels with the candlestick in the most private room in the house, and in his impatience to feed his eyes with his great opulence, he placed lights in his candlesticks; the twelve dervises appearing, he gave each of them a blow with his cane with all his strength, lest he should be failing in the laws of the Talisman; but he had not remarked, that Abounalder, when he struck them, had the cane in his left hand; Abdallah, by a natural motion, made use of his right; and the dervises, instead of becoming heaps of riches, as he expected, immediately drew from beneath their robes each a formidable club, with which they beat him so unmercifully, that they left him almost dead, and, disappearing, carried with them all his treasures, the camels, the slave, the horse, and the candlestick.

Thus was Abdallah punished by poverty and almost by death, for his unreasonable ambition, accompanied by an ingratitude, as wicked as it was audacious.

## 6.

*Zaandam en de hut van Peter den Grootte.*

In de nabijheid van Amsterdam ligt de stad Zaandam, die bekend is als de plaats waar Peter de Grootte als scheepstimmerman werkte. Op verren afstand gezien, schijnt het eene stad van enkel windmolens, want daar

zijn ook niet minder dan vierhonderd zaag-, papier-, olie- en korenmolens, die veel bijdragen tot den rijkdom en bloei dezer plaats. Vroeger waren er groote scheepstimmerwerven, maar nu worden er geene groote schepen meer gebouwd, wijl de haven zich niet meer in een goeden staat bevindt. De huizen zijn allen zeer net en zindelijk. De voornaamste straat of weg is ongeveer een uur lang en begrensd door een smal kanaal, waarover wel honderd kleine bruggen den toegang tot weilanden en woningen verschaffen.

In 1696 woonde hier Peter de Groote, onder den naam van Peter Michaeloff. Hij was gekleed als een eenvoudige knecht, en werkte als scheepstimmerman. Langen tijd hield hij zijnen hoogen stand geheim, maar toen zijne medgezellen ontdekten dat hij de Czar was aller Russen, wilden zij hem overeenkomstig zijnen rang behandelen; doch hij weigerde dit en verlangde dat zij op dezelfde gemeenzame wijze met hem werkten als te voren.

De hut, waarin Peter de Groote woonde, is zorgvuldig in denzelfden staat bewaard gebleven. Zij werd in 1823 door de toenmalige kroonprinses, thans de Koningin-weduwe, gekocht, en op haar bevel werd er om de hut een steenen gebouw opgericht, om dezelve voor beschadiging te bevrijden. De hut is verdeeld in twee kamers; in de eene vindt men nog zijne eikenhouten tafel en drie stoelen, benevens de bedstede waarin hij sliep. De muren zijn bedekt met de namen der personen, die deze plaats bezocht hebben, en er zijn verscheidene boeken waarin vreemdelingen hunne naamteekening geschreven hebben. Keizer Alexander I bezocht de hut in 1814, en liet twee opschriften in de kamer plaatsen. Het eene heet: *Petro Magno, Alexander*; het andere wordt aldus vertaald: *niets is den grooten man te klein.*

1. Waar ligt Zaandam?
2. Wie heeft daar gewoond?
3. Hoe ziet er Zaandam in de verte uit?
4. Hoe lang is de voornaamste straat?
5. Onder welken naam was Peter de Groote aldaar bekend?
6. Wilde hij overeenkomstig zijnen rang behandeld worden?
7. Bestaat de hut nog, waarin hij woonde?
8. Welke zijn de merkwaardigheden, die men daar vindt?

7.

*Eene Indiaansche herberg.*

De reizigers in Indië treffen dikwijls langs den weg eene soort van herberg of rusthuis (*resting house*) aan, die aldaar den naam van Choultry draagt. Deze herbergen worden gewoonlijk door eenen rijken Hindoe gebouwd ten gemakke voor de reizigers, die verlangen uit te rusten gedurende de hitte des daags, of ook des nachts. Zulk een gebouw wordt meestal opgericht onder het digte loof van eenen banaanboom (*banyan tree*), en zeer zelden is zulk een verblijf geheel ledig. De meeste lieden echter die daar te zamen komen zijn Hindoes, of kooplieden, die de reizigers van allerlei waren voorzien. Zeer dikwijls maken de zendelingen van deze gelegenheid gebruik, om aan de verzamelde menigte het Evangelie te verkondigen. Niets wordt in deze herbergen door den reiziger betaald. Ieder blijft er zoo lang als hij begeert, en zoodra de menschen vertrokken zijn, nemen de apen, slangen en vledermuizen (*bat*) hunne plaats in.

8.

*De koffij.*

De struik (*shrub*), waaraan (de) koffij groeit, is altijd

groen. Zijne hoogte bedraagt zelden meer dan vier of vijf voet. De takken zijn bedekt met eene ruwe schors van eene witachtige kleur; de bloemen gelijken zeer op die der jasmijnen en verspreiden (*diffuse*) eene sterke balsamieke geur (*balmy fragrance*). Wanneer de bloesem afvalt, komt de vrucht in zijne plaats, die eerst groen, vervolgens rood is en eindelijk de kleur eener rijpe kers heeft. In het midden van deze vrucht ligt de boon, die de koffij is, welke zoo veelvuldig gebruikt wordt.

Men heeft twee of driemaal jaarlijks eene rijke inzameling, en het is zeer gewoon vrucht en bloem te zamen op denzelfden boom te vinden. (De maand) Mei is de eigenlijke oogstmaand.

Abyssinië is het vaderland der koffij, maar zij groeit thans in vele streken der aarde, zooals op de West-Indische Eilanden, Java, enz.

## 9.

*Jane Grey.*

De geschiedenis van deze beminnelijke, maar ongelukkige vorstin moet het diepste medelijden opwekken bij elkeen, die nog de minste aanspraak maakt op gevoel. Zij was de oudste dochter van Henry Grey, markies van Dorset, en werd geboren in Leicestershire, te Bradgate, in het jaar 1537. Zij bezat reeds als kind beminnswaardige eigenschappen en muntte bijzonder (*especially*) uit in taalkennis. Zij sprak zeer vloeiend Fransch en Italiaansch en kende ook Latijn, Grieksch, Hebreeuwsch en Arabisch. Hare leermeesters waren John Aylmer, later bisschop van Londen, en de beroemde Roger Ascham. Hoewel zij reeds op jeugdigen leeftijd met lord Guildford Dudley gehuwd was, had de hertog van Northumberland op eene listige wijze Eduard VI overreed (*prevailed*), zijne

zusters Maria en Elizabeth van de opvolging op den troon buiten te sluiten, en een testament te maken ten gunste van Jane Grey. Dit document werd zorgvuldig verborgen gehouden tot na den dood van Eduard, toen de hertog, haar vader en vele aanzienlijke edellieden zich naar de woning van Jane Grey begaven en haar een eerbied bewezen, dien men alleen aan den Souverein des rijks (*realm*) verschuldigd is.

Lady Jane weigerde in den beginne volstrektelijk (*in the most decisive manner*) de eerbewijzingen, welke men haar aanbood; doch ten laatste, overweldigd (*overcome*) door de dringende beden haars vaders en echtgenoots (*husband*), stemde zij toe de kroon te dragen, hoewel niet zonder tranen te storten.

De hertog van Northumberland deed haar toen als koningin van Engeland afkondigen (*caused her to be proclaimed*), en (de) bisschop Ridley hield eene lange rede, om hare regten en verdiensten te verdedigen; maar het volk en vele edellieden waren in het geheel niet (*by no means*) tevreden met de uitsluiting van de zusters des overleden konings, wier aanspraak op den Engelschen troon onbetwistbaar was. Het duurde niet lang, of de meesten stemden voor Maria. De vader van Jane Grey deelde haar deze gebeurtenis mede, en gaf haar den raad, om oogenblikkelijk de koninklijke waardigheid neder te leggen (*to lay aside*), hetwelk zij met meerder ijver deed, dan toen zij dezelve had aanvaard (*assumed*); terwijl zij te kennen gaf (*intimating*), dat zij dezelve alleen had aangenomen, om de wenschen harer bloedverwanten te vervullen.

Zoodra de nieuwe koningin den troon besteeg, werd de hertog van Northumberland gevangen genomen en ter dood gebragt (*executed*); Jane Grey en haar echtgenoot werden in afzonderlijke vertrekken van den Tower opgesloten, met het bevel van koningin Maria, dat niemand haar

mogt bezoeken, en korten tijd na de krooning der nieuwe vorstin werden zij ter dood veroordeeld. Jane Grey gedroeg zich met de grootste waardigheid; zij hoorde kalm haar vonnis aan, en noch de pogingen van Feckenham, den bicchtvader van koningin Maria, noch andere aangewende middelen konden haar overtuigen of overhalen, om de waarheden van het Protestantismus te verloochenen. Zij had besloten in de belijdenis, die zij had aangenomen, te volharden en te sterven.

De laatste dagen van haar jeugdig leven bragt zij door met brieven te schrijven aan haren vader, en las met veel ijver in een Grieksch Testament, welk boek zij met eenen uitvoerigen brief aan hare zuster Catharina toezond.

Haar echtgenoot, lord Guildford, had van de wreede Maria verlof ontvangen, om zijne vrouw een laatst vaarwel te mogen toeroepen, maar Jane Grey weigerde standvastig deze zamenkomst (*interview*), omdat zij dan te zeer geschokt zoude worden door droefheid, en niet meer in staat zijn met moed en sterkte het laatste plechtige oogenblik, dat zoozeer nabij was, te gemoet te zien. Zij zond hem een schriftelijk vaarwel en maakte hem opmerkzaam op (*turned his attention to*) de blijde hope eener zalige vereeniging in eene wereld van eindeloos geluk.

Maandag, 12 Februarij 1554, was de dag vastgesteld (*appointed*) voor de voltrekking van het doodvonnis. Lord Guildford onderging de doodstraf met groote kalmte en waardigheid. Jane Grey beklom (*ascended*) het schavot met eene onderwerping, die geene pen kan beschrijven. Zij rigtte eene korte toespraak tot de omstanders, vergaf hare vijanden al het leed haar aangedaan, en nadat zij hare ziel in des Heeren hand had aanbevolen, legde zij het hoofd op het blok. De bijl viel, en een der beminnelijkste slagtoffers van de bloedige (*bloody*) Maria, gelijk men met regt deze koningin genoemd heeft, was niet meer.

## Vierde Afdeeling.

### LEES- EN VERTAALOEFFENINGEN.

#### 1.

*A cure for pale cheeks.*

Little Frank looks pale and wan,  
And fretful spends the day;  
The roses of his cheeks are gone,  
And all his wish for play.

But look at James, his laughing eyes  
A better story tell;  
He, cheerful boy, is much too wise  
To make himself unwell.

But why is Frank so pale and dull?  
He can't enjoy his play;  
While James, with spirits ever full,  
Makes all around him gay?

Because James early goes to bed,  
And wakes refresh'd and light:  
But Frank, by foolish fancy led,  
Sits up till ten at night.

*The Tulipomania.*

Among the native productions of the east, introduced into Europe by means of its relations with India, was a flower which the Turks call *tulibant*, and which received in Europe the appellation of *tulip*. It appears to have been well known in this part of the world so early as the middle of the sixteenth century. These flowers, you know, though of every variety of colour, are not the greatest ornaments of our gardens, being surpassed by many others in beauty and fragrance. Nevertheless the tulip, about a century after its transplantation into Europe, acquired a consideration which no other flower ever obtained; so that it was valued far above even the most precious metals. The lovers of flowers seemed to be seized with a sort of madness, which has been aptly denominated *tulipomania*. I shall endeavour to give you a clear and simple explanation of the folly which this word denotes, and of which there are but few parallels.

It was from 1634 to 1637 that the tulipomania raged in Holland, particularly at Harlem, Amsterdam, Utrecht, Alkmar, Leyden, Rotterdam, Horn, Enkhuysen, and other places. In those years tulips rose to enormous prices, and enriched many speculators. The florists held in particular estimation certain species, to which they gave particular names, and which they sold dearer than others. A single root of the variety called *viceroi* produced the owner four fat oxen, eight hogs, twelve sheep, ten hundred weight of cheese, two pipes of wine, a bed and furniture complete, a silver cup, a great quantity of corn, and other provisions, to the value of twenty-five thousand florins.

These roots were sold by weight, like the most valuable commodities; an ounce often cost several thousand florins: the most esteemed variety was that called *semper augustus*: it was valued at two thousand florins, and reported to be so rare that there were but two roots of the kind; one at Harlem, and the other at Amsterdam. A flowerfancier offered for one of these four thousand six hundred florins, and a fine coach and two horses into the bargain. Another person gave twelve acres of land for a root. In 1637, the collection of tulips of one individual was sold, after his death, by his heirs, for the enormous sum of nine thousand pounds; one single *semper augustus* sold for two thousand florins.

Everybody's head was turned by the passion for tulips; those who had not ready money bartered away their lands and houses to procure them. The florists, and other persons who were engaged in the cultivation of flowers, in a very short time made immense fortunes. All classes of society were therefore desirous of embarking in the trade; and all the Dutch from the first gentleman in the land to the chimney-sweeper and rag-man, began to speculate on the tulipomania. A bed of tulips was considered the greatest treasure that a person could possess, and was worth at least as much as the most magnificent palace. It is related, that a sailor, having brought some goods to a merchant who cultivated tulips in his garden for this speculation, received from the latter a herring for breakfast. As he was going away with it, he saw some roots in the garden; and thinking they were common onions, he began quietly eating them with his herring. At this moment the merchant came up, and perceiving what he was about, »Villain!» cried he, in a tone of despair, »your breakfast has ruined me; I could have regaled a monarch at half the expense.» The poor sailor, as you may sup-

pose, was in the utmost astonishment; and it was not without difficulty that he was made sensible of his mistake.

The rapid increase of private fortunes made people neglect everything to engage in the speculations of the moment. The taverns and alehouses resembled little exchanges; bargains were there concluded in the presence of notaries and witnesses, for a few tulip-roots; and in general these negotiations, which were transacted with the utmost gravity were followed by splendid entertainments. It has been calculated, that in one single town of Holland the dealings in tulips amounted in three years to ten millions of florins. It should be observed, however, that those who carried on this traffic did not cultivate the flowers, but only bought and sold; and it was frequently the case, that neither the buyer nor the seller ever saw the tulips for which they bargained. Others engaged to supply roots, which in fact they never furnished: before the flowering season, arrangements and negotiations were concluded for the sale and purchase of more tulips than perhaps all the gardens in Holland-contained. There existed, as I have told you, but very few flowers of the variety called *semper augustus*; and yet no other kind was so frequent in commerce as that. A gentleman would perhaps buy of a chimney-sweeper two thousand florins worth of tulips, and sell them again to a farmer at still higher price; and yet none of the three ever had the tulips, or thought of obtaining possession of them. It was not properly speaking in tulips that they trafficked, but in money. Had the rarity and beauty of the tulips been the object of this trade, people would have bestowed the utmost attention on the cultivation of that flower: they would have gone to its native country, the east, and sought the most beautiful species all the world over: but, instead of this, the speculators ne-

ver quitted their alehouse, and enriched themselves by an extraordinary kind of jobbing; the whole secret of which was this:

Suppose a dealer engaged to furnish a gentleman at the expiration of six months with a tulip-root of any particular sort, for the sum of a thousand florins; at the expiration of the time agreed upon, the price of that variety was either higher or lower, or perhaps the same as before. If the current price of one thousand florins had meanwhile risen to fifteen hundred, the gentleman did not demand his tulip, but the dealer was obliged to pay him five hundred florins in cash; but if the price was lower than at the time of making the bargain, say eight hundred florins, the gentleman, on the contrary, paid the dealer the sum of two hundred. If, however, the tulips were neither dearer nor cheaper at the end of six months, neither party lost or gained, and their contract was at an end. Everything depended on the price current, by which they regulated their agreements and bargains; and the dealers were as anxious to know the prices of tulips every day, as people are with us to inquire the prices of stocks. It frequently happened, that the same person gained of one, and lost to another; and if he had no cash to pay his debts, he referred his creditors to those who had lost to him; so that plenty of business might be transacted without tulips, and even without money. As everybody was desirous of participating in this kind of stock-jobbing, the rich speculated on the rarest species, while the bargains of the lower classes were confined to the most common sorts. Taking all circumstances into consideration, this commerce in tulips, or rather tulipomania, was in reality a game of chance, by which all were at first seduced by the immense profits to be derived from it; but as these speculations possessed only a fictiti-

ous lustre, and had no solid foundation, the gamblers were at length undeceived, and learned, to their cost, that excessive cupidity generally makes dupes of those by whom it is harboured, and that labour and industry are the surest road to fortune.

Nations and individuals, who apply themselves to commerce, cannot, I repeat it, hope for prosperity, except from industry and frugality. To conclude the history of the tulipomania, I shall add, that in a few years the rage for speculations rose to such a height that most of those who engaged in them were at length unable to fulfil their contracts. Others squandered the wealth which they had so easily acquired; whilst others again more discreetly relinquished the traffic, and would no longer subject their property to continual risk. The price of tulips fell lower and lower; the sellers, to avoid utter ruin, offered the buyers natural tulips, but the latter would not have them. Hence arose numberless squabbles and law-suits: the tribunals refused to decide these complicated affairs; and the speculators were obliged to abate their extravagant demands, and to take what they could get. Many were ruined, and had unfortunately conceived an aversion to their original occupations, which had furnished them with the means of a comfortable subsistence. Accustomed to indolence and reverses of fortune, they chose rather to live in penury than to return to their former employments. The eyes of all were at length opened, and many people became sensible of their folly and shame, at the expense of their property and peace of mind.

DEPPING'S *Evening entertainments.*

3.

*The Ants.*

Emma, those little insects see  
All busy at their toil;  
Each bearing in his mouth, with glee,  
The product of the soil.

The grain thus borne with labouring feet,  
They carry to their homes,  
To furnish for their snug retreat,  
Food, when the winter comes.

And thus will little folks, if wise,  
Their care and thoughts engage,  
To gain in early years, supplies  
Fit for their riper age; —

Will still their learning keep in view,  
And, more than all the rest,  
The paths of virtue will pursue,  
And thus be surely blest.

4.

## GULLIVER'S VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT.

*Chapter I.*

Mr. Gulliver was early in his life sent to the university of Cambridge, where he very closely pursued his studies for three years; but the charge of maintaining him being too great for his father's narrow fortune, he was bound apprentice to a surgeon in London. What little money he got, he laid out in learning navigation and mathematics, as he always fancied he should be a great tra-



veller. When his time was expired, he left London, and studied physic two years at Leyden in Holland.

Soon after his return from Leyden, he was recommended to be surgeon to the *Swallow*, Captain Abraham Parnell commander, with whom he made a voyage or two into the Levant, and other parts.

He was surgeon successively to two ships, and made several voyages to the East and West Indies, by which he made some addition to his fortune.

He sailed from Bristol on the 4th of May 1699, on a voyage to the South-seas, in the ship *Antelope*. The voyage was at first very prosperous; till, leaving those seas, and steering their course towards the East Indies, they were driven by a storm to the northward of Van Diemen's land. Twelve of the crew were dead by hard labour and bad food, and the rest were in a very weak condition.

On the 5th of November, the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being hazy, they espied a rock within a cable's length of the ship, and the wind being strong, they immediately split upon it. Mr. Gulliver and five of the crew heaved out the boat, and made a shift to get clear of the ship and the rock. They rowed till they could work no longer, and then, trusting to the mercy of the waves, in about half an hour the boat was upset by a sudden squall from the north. What became of the other seamen, Mr. Gulliver knew not; but he swam with wind and tide, and often in vain let his legs drop, in hopes of feeling the bottom; at last, when he was almost ready to expire, he found himself within his depth; and the storm being greatly abated, he walked above a mile before he reached the shore. He then advanced near half a mile up the country, but could not discover either houses or inhabitants. He lay down on

the grass, which was very short and soft, and slept about nine hours. He awaked just at daybreak, and upon attempting to rise, he found that he could not stir; for, as he lay on his back, he found his arms and legs fastened to the ground; and his hair, which was long and thick, tied in the same manner. In a little time he felt something alive moving on his left leg, which advanced almost up to his chin, when bending his eyes downwards, he perceived it to be a human creature, not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hand, and a quiver at his back. He then felt at least forty more following the first, and being greatly astonished, he roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them broke their limbs by leaping from his sides to the ground. They soon after returned; and one of them who ventured to get a full sight of his face, with the greatest astonishment cried out: *Hekinah Degul*. He did not understand their language, and by often struggling to get loose, he at last wrenched out the pegs and strings by which he was fastened to the ground, and so far released his hair, that he could turn his head sideways; upon which the creatures ran off a second time, with a great shout. Soon after one of them cried out aloud: *Tolgo Phonac*; when instantly Mr. Gulliver perceived some hundreds of arrows discharged upon his hands and face, which pricked him like so many needles, and gave him so much pain, that he strove again to get loose; some of them attempted to stab him in the side with their spears, but they could not pierce his buff waist-coat. When the people observed that he lay quiet, they discharged no more arrows. He saw them busy in erecting a stage in a little distance, about a foot and a half high; which they had no sooner finished, than four of them ascended it by a ladder. One of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, was tal-

ler than those who attended him; one of whom held up his train, and was about four inches high. He cried out three times: *Langro Dehul San*, on which they cut the strings that bound the left side of his head. The little monarch made an oration, not one word of which Mr. Gulliver could understand; he observed, however, many signs of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness; and he answered by motions of submission and friendship. Being almost famished with hunger, he put his finger frequently to his mouth, to signify to them that he wanted food. The Hurgo, for so they called a great lord, understood him very well; he descended from the stage, and ordered several ladders to be placed against Mr. Gulliver's sides, by which above a hundred of the people mounted, and walked towards his mouth, laden with baskets of meat; there were shoulders, legs, and loins, shaped like those of mutton, but smaller than the wings of a lark. He ate two or three of them at a mouthful, and took three of the loaves, which were as big as a musket bullet, at a time. The inhabitants were astonished at his bulk and appetite: and, on his making a sign for drink, they flung up one of their largest hogsheads, rolled it towards his hand, and beat out the top. He drank it off at a draught, for it did not hold half a pint, and tasted like Burgundy. They afterwards brought a second hogshead, which he also despatched; and, calling for more, found they had no more to give him. When he had done these wonders, they shouted for joy; and after warning the people on the ground, the lords desired he would throw the empty barrels as far as he could; and when they saw the vessels in the air, there was a universal shout of *Hekinah Degul*.

Mr. Gulliver could not help wondering at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who ventured to mount

and walk upon his body, while one of his hands was in liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature as he must appear to them. After some time, an ambassador from the king appeared before him, who producing his credentials under the royal seal, spoke about ten minutes without any sign of anger, and yet with great resolution; pointing often towards the metropolis, which was distant about half a mile, whither it was his majesty's pleasure that he should be conveyed. — Mr. Gulliver made signs, that he should be glad to be released, and the ambassador understood very well what he meant, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation, and signified that he must be carried as a prisoner: he therefore gave tokens that they might do what they would with him; whereupon the Hurgo with his train withdrew with cheerful countenances. Soon after the people shouted out *Peplom Selau*, and he felt the cords so relaxed, that he was able to turn upon his right side. They then rubbed his hands and face with an ointment which took off the smart of their arrows; and this circumstance, added to the plentiful meal he had made, caused him to fall fast asleep. — The king immediately set five hundred carpenters to work, to prepare an engine by which he might be conveyed to the capital. It was a wooden frame, three inches high, seven feet long, and four broad, and moved upon twenty-two wheels. It was brought close to Mr. Gulliver's side as he lay. To raise so immense a creature upon this vehicle, eighty poles, each of a foot high, were erected; and very strong ropes, of the bigness of packthread, were fastened by hooks to many bandages which the workmen had girt round his neck, hands, body and legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords, by pulleys fastened on the poles, and in a few hours he was

raised, and slung into the engine, and tied down. All this Mr. Gulliver was told afterwards; for, while the whole operation was performing, he lay fast asleep, by the force of a medicine that had been purposely infused in the wine he had drunk. Fifteen hundred strong horses, about four inches and a half high, were yoked to the machine, and had much ado to drag it along. They made a long march this day, and Mr. Gulliver was guarded in the night by five thousand men on each side, one half of them with torches, and the other half of them with bows and arrows, ready to shoot him if he offered to stir. Early in the next morning they continued their march, and at noon arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates.

The carriage stopped near an old temple, the largest in the kingdom, but which, on account of a murder having been committed therein, was never frequented. In this edifice it was agreed Mr. Gulliver should lodge. The gate was four feet high and two feet wide, and on each side were four windows. To this temple he was fastened by ninety-one chains, which were fixed to his leg by thirty-six padlocks. Just opposite stood a famous turret, five feet high; to the top of which the emperor and many lords ascended, for the sake of seeing so large a monster; vast numbers of people came also upon the same errand; and when the workmen found that they had thoroughly secured him, they cut all the strings with which he was bound; and upon his rising upon his legs, they showed the greatest marks of wonder and astonishment.

Mr. Gulliver was no sooner on his legs, than he was pleased with beholding the prospect of the country; large fields of forty feet square; woods, at least sixty feet long; and tall trees, almost seven feet high; and the city on the left hand, which looked like the view of London in a raree-shew.

The emperor having descended from the tower, came forward, with the queen, and many ladies, to examine Mr. Gulliver more minutely. He had ordered his cooks and butlers to prepare ten waggon loads of meat and ten of wine; and he and his attendants sat at some distance to see him dine. He suffered Gulliver to take him up into the palm of his hand, after having drawn his sword to defend himself if he should not be used kindly.

The emperor spoke often to Mr. Gulliver, and he as often answered him, but all to no purpose, for they could not understand one another. When the court withdrew, he was left with a strong guard, to prevent the impertinence of the rabble, many of whom, supposing he would devour all the victuals in the country, had the audacity to shoot their arrows at him; but the colonel ordered six of them to be seized, and delivered into his hands; they were immediately bound, and pushed towards him; he placed them upon his right hand, and made a sign as if he would eat them up alive; they were greatly affrighted and squalled terribly when they saw him take out his knife, but afterwards looking mildly, and cutting the strings with which they were bound, he placed them gently on the ground, and away they ran as fast as they were able. This mark of clemency was represented much to his advantage at court.

For a fortnight he lay upon the naked pavement of his house, which was smooth stone; during which time six hundred beds were brought in carriages, and worked up within the building; one hundred and fifty were sown together in breadth and length; and these were four double, which, however, was barely sufficient to relieve him from the hardness of the floor; and in the same manner also, he was provided with sheets, blankets and coverlids.

The emperor, however, had frequent councils concerning him; the court apprehended his breaking loose, that his diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve him, or to shoot him in the face and hands with poisoned arrows; but again they foresaw, that the stench of so large a carcase might produce a plague in the land. In one of these consultations, an officer of the army went to the councilchamber, and gave an account of his behaviour to the six criminals just mentioned, which worked so favourably on the mind of his majesty, that he issued orders for all the villages within nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning six beeves, four sheep, and a proper quantity of bread and wine for his subsistence, for all which they were paid by the treasury board. Six hundred domestics were also allowed him, upon board wages, who lived in tents on each side of the door of his house. Three hundred tailors were employed in making him a suit of clothes. Six men of learning attended to teach him their language; and the emperor's horses and troops frequently exercised near him, to accustom them to so huge a sight. He soon learned enough of the language to acquaint the king with his great desire of liberty, which he repeated on his knees. But the mighty monarch informed him, that his request could not be granted without the advice of the council, and that he must swear peace with him and his kingdom; and further advised, that by his discreet behaviour he might obtain the good opinion of him and all his subjects.

He next desired that certain officers might search him, for probably he might have weapons about him which might be dangerous to the state. To this Mr. Gulliver consented, he took the two officers in his hand, and put them first into one pocket and then into another. These

gentlemen set down in writing every thing they found; and Mr. Gulliver having set them safely on the ground, they presented the inventory to the emperor, which was as follows.

In the right-hand pocket, we found a large piece of coarse cloth, large enough for a floor-cloth to the chamber of state. In the left pocket, a silver chest, with a cover of the same metal, we desired to see it opened; and on our stepping into it found ourselves midleg deep in a sort of dust which made us sneeze wonderfully. In the right waistcoat-pocket we found a number of white thin substances folded, about the bigness of three men, tied with a cable, and marked with black figures. In the left an engine, from the back of which were extended a row of long poles resembling pallsadoes. In the right-hand breeches-pocket, we saw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, fastened to a strong piece of timber, larger than the pillar, on one side of which were huge pieces of strong iron, sticking out; and in the left pocket, another engine of the same kind. In a smaller pocket of the right-hand, several pieces of white and red metal of different sizes; some of the white ones were so heavy, that we could hardly lift them. In the left pocket, were two strange engines, with one of which he told us he shaved himself, and that with the other he cut his victuals. There were two other smaller pockets, from one of which he took a large globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal; this he put close to our ears, and we were surprised at a noise as loud as the fall of a watermill; this engine he called his oracle, and said it pointed out the time of every action of his life; we therefore presume it is the god that he worships. From the left fob he took out a net, large enough for a fisherman; in this were several pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real

gold, are of more value than all the wealth in your majesty's coffers.

Round his waist was a belt made of the skin of some unknown animal, from which hung a sword, the length of nine men; on his right side was a bag, containing two cells, in one of which were several balls as big as a man's head, and which we were scarce able to lift; the other was filled with black grains, about fifty of which we could hold in the palms of our hands.

When this inventory was read over, the king desired Mr. Gulliver to give up the several particulars; he therefore first took his scimitar out of the scabbard, and waving it backward and forward, the reflection of the sun greatly dazzled the eyes of the beholders. The next thing he demanded, was one of the hollow iron pillars; Mr. Gulliver took it out of his pocket, and charging it with powder only, he let it off in the air; on which hundreds of the Lilliputians fell on the ground as if they had been dead, and even the emperor was greatly confounded. His pistols were then delivered up, together with the pouch of powder and bullets, after begging that the former might be kept from the fire, for fear his imperial majesty's palace might be blown into the air. The emperor being desirous of seeing his watch, two of the yeomen of the guards slung it across a pole, as the draymen do a barrel of beer in England; and he and the learned men were amazed at the noise it made, and at the motion of the minute hand. His money, knife, razor, comb, etc. were then given up. His scimitar, pistols, and pouch were conveyed by broad-wheel waggons to the king's stores, but the rest of the things were restored.

Mr. Gulliver's gentle behaviour gained the good opinion of the emperor, the army, and the people in general; they became less apprehensive of danger from him, and

at last the boys and girls would dance country-dances on the palm of his hands as he lay on the ground, or play at hide and seek in his hair.

### Chapter II.

The emperor at length mentioned his intentions of releasing Mr. Gulliver in the cabinet, where, after some opposition, the following preliminaries were drawn up for their mutual interest and security.

His sublime majesty proposeth to the *Manmountain* the following articles, which, by a solemn oath, he shall be obliged to perform

1st, He shall not depart without licence.

2dly, He shall not come into the metropolis without leave.

3dly, He shall confine his walks to the high roads; and not lie down in any meadow or corn-field.

4thly, He shall take care not to trample upon any of our subjects, their horses or carriages.

5thly, If an express requires extraordinary despatch, he shall be obliged to carry in his pocket the messenger and horse, and return them safe and sound.

6thly, He shall be our ally against our enemies.

7thly, He shall be aiding and assisting to our workmen, in raising certain great stones for covering the park walls, and other royal buildings.

Lastly, that upon the ratification of these articles, he shall have a daily allowance of meat and drink sufficient for the support of seventeen hundred and twenty-four men. As soon as Mr. Gulliver had sworn to and subscribed these articles, his chains were unlocked, and he was at full liberty; he immediately made his acknowledgement by prostrating himself at his majesty's feet. The emperor

graciously ordered him to rise; and after many expressions of friendship, told him, that he hoped he would prove a useful servant, and deserve the favours he had already, or might hereafter confer upon him. — The wall of the city of Mildendo is two feet and a half high, and seven inches broad, so that a coach may be driven upon the top of it, and there are strong towers at the distance of every ten feet. Mr. Gulliver easily strode over the wall, and went carefully through the principal streets in his waist-coat only, for fear the skirts of his coat might damage the roofs and eaves of the houses. The garret windows, and the tops of the houses were so crowded with spectators, that Mr. Gulliver imagined the city must contain at least five hundred thousand souls. Some of the houses are five stories high, the markets well provided, and the shops very rich. The city is an exact square of five hundred feet; two great streets, which divide it into quarters, are five feet wide; the lanes and allies are from twelve to eighteen inches. The emperor's palace, which is in the centre, is inclosed by a wall two feet high; the outward court is a vast square of forty feet, and here stand the royal apartments. These, Mr. Gulliver, by lying down upon his side, and applying his face to the windows, had the pleasure of viewing, and he found them more splendid than could be imagined. He saw the empress and the young princes in their several lodgings, and her majesty was pleased to put her hand out of the window for him to kiss. Mr. Gulliver having been informed by the king's secretary that they were going to war with a neighbouring nation, communicated to the emperor a project he had formed of seizing the enemy's whole fleet while it lay at anchor in the harbour, and ready to sail with the first fair wind. The depth of the channel that divided the two islands of Lil-

liput and Blefuscu, with whom they were going to war, was, in the middle, about six feet; after being provided with a proper quantity of cables, as thick as packthread, and bars of iron as thick as knitting needles, which he bent into the form of a hook, Mr. Gulliver, in his leather jacket only, waded about thirty yards into the sea; when being out of his depth, he swam till he felt the bottom on the opposite shore. The enemies were so frightened, that they all quitted their ships and made towards the shore. Mr. Gulliver then took out his tackle, fastened a hook at the prow of each ship, and then tying all the cords together, began to pull, but not a ship would stir, for they had all good anchorage. He therefore took out his knife, and resolutely cut all their cables. In executing this, however, he received a prodigious number of wounds in his hands and face, from the arrows of the enemies. He then took up the cords to which his hooks were tied, and with greath ease drew fifty of the enemy's men of war after him.

The emperor, with his attendants, stood on the coast, expecting the issue of this adventure. They saw the ships move, but could not discern Mr. Gulliver, who was up to his chin in water. They concluded him to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet were approaching in a hostile manner. However, as the sea became shallower every step, he was soon within hearing; and then holding up the end of the cable by which the fleet were fastened together, he cried aloud, Long live the most puissant emperor of Lilliput! He was received at his landing with great encomiums, and created a Nardac, which is the highest title of honour.

His majesty desired that Mr. Gulliver would take some future opportunity of bringing all the rest of the enemy's ships into his ports, and his ambition was so great, that

he seemed to think of nothing but reducing Blefuscu into a province. Mr. Gulliver, however, boldly protested, that he would never be an instrument of bringing a brave and free people into slavery.

This open declaration, however, was at first productive of dislike in the emperor, and afterwards of hatred. From this time an intrigue began between his majesty and his ministers, that had like to have ended in poor Gulliver's destruction.

Soon after the seizure of the Blefuscu fleet, ambassadors were sent from that nation with humble offers of peace. After the treaty was ratified, their excellencies paid a visit to Mr. Gulliver; they complimented him upon his valour and generosity, and in the name of their emperor invited him to pay a visit to their kingdom. Accordingly, the next time he saw the emperor, he desired leave to wait on the Blefuscu monarch, which he granted indeed, but in a very cold manner, for Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented his intercourse with the ambassadors as a mark of disaffection.

It was not long, however, before he had an opportunity of doing, as he thought, so signal a service as would have put aside all suspicions of his fidelity. He was alarmed at midnight with horrid cries, and several of the courtiers entreated him to repair immediately to the palace, for her majesty's apartments were on fire, by the carelessness of a maid of honour, who fell asleep while she was reading a romance; Mr. Gulliver got up, and made the best of his way to the metropolis; he might easily have stilled the fire with the flap of his coat, but that, in his haste, he had unfortunately left behind him.

Mr. Gulliver had, however, drank plentifully of wine; and this, by his coming near the flames, and by his labouring to quench them, began to operate, and was voided

in such a quantity, and was so properly applied, that in three minutes the fire was totally finished.

*Chapter III.*

The common size of the natives is about six inches, and there is the same proportion in all their animals, plants, and trees; their horses and oxen are four or five inches high; their sheep an inch and a half, their geese the bigness of a beetle, and so on. Their tallest trees are about seven feet high, and a good handsome cabbage is about as big as a common horse-bean.

Their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the right hand to the left, nor from the left hand to the right, nor from the top to the bottom: but aslant from one corner of the paper to the other, as the ladies in England generally write.

Mr. Gulliver's suit of servants was very numerous: he had three hundred cooks to dress his victuals. He used to place twenty waiters upon the table, a hundred more attended on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with wine. A shoulder of mutton was one mouthful, and a barrel or liquor a reasonable draught. Once indeed he had a sirloin of beef so immensely large, that he made three bits of it. The geese and turkies were a scanty mouthful, and of their smaller fowl he frequently took up twenty or thirty at a time upon the end of his knife.

Flimnap, the treasurer, was always a mortal enemy to Mr. Gulliver. He represented to the emperor the low condition of the treasury; and, in short, went so far as to inform him, that the man-mountain had cost his majesty above a million of money in eating and drinking, and that it was highly advisable, that the first fair opportunity should be taken of dismissing him.

While Mr. Gulliver was preparing to pay a visit to the emperor of Blefuscu, a person of rank called at his house privately, and in the night. After the common salutations were over, the worthy nobleman informed him, that at the instigation of Flimnap, the treasurer, Lentoc, the commander in chief, Lancon, the chamberlain, and Balinuff, the grand justiciary, his majesty had resolved upon the following articles of impeachment against him for high treason, and other capital crimes.

1st, That he did, in defiance of a known law, under the frivolous pretence of extinguishing a fire in the royal palace, maliciously and traitorously make water upon the same.

2dly, That after having seized and secured the fleet of Blefuscu, he did refuse to destroy all the other shipping, and to put the inhabitants to death, under a pretence of an unwillingness to destroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people.

3dly, That he was preparing to make a voyage to Blefuscu, for which he had received only a verbal licence, and thereby to aid and abet the emperor of Blefuscu against his imperial majesty of Lilliput.

Mr. Gulliver at first thought of pleading to the articles, and boldly standing trial; but he recollected, that state-trials generally terminate as the judges please to direct. He then was strongly bent upon resistance; for while he had liberty, the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue him, and he could easily with stones pelt the metropolis to pieces.

At last, however, he resolved to leave the island peaceably, and to visit the emperor of Blefuscu. He went to that side of the island where the fleet lay, seized upon a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, heaved anchor, and, after stripping, put his clothes into the vessel,

and drawing it after him, soon arrived at the port of Blefuscu. His majesty, the royal family, and great officers of the court, immediately came out to receive him. The reception he met with was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; but for want of a proper house and bed, he was forced to lie on the ground, wrapped up in his coverlid. Three days after Mr. Gulliver arrived at Blefuscu, he observed something in the sea, about a league from shore, that resembled a boat overturned; and after wading a considerable way, he found that the tide bore it towards the shore, and that it was really a boat, which some tempest had driven from a ship. By the time he had waded up to his chin, the boat was within reach, he then got behind it, and with little difficulty pushed it ashore.

After some time he was informed, that an envoy was arrived from Lilliput, with a copy of the articles of impeachment, who represented the lenity of the emperor his master, and that he was content the culprit should be punished only with the loss of his eyes; and that he hoped the emperor of Blefuscu would order him to be sent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot.

To this the emperor replied, that he believed their majesties would soon be made easy. For that the Man-mountain had found a prodigious vessel on the shore, able to carry him to sea, which was ordered to be fitted up accordingly to his own direction, and that he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from so insupportable an incumbrance; and with this answer the envoy returned to Lilliput.

Since fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a boat in Mr. Gulliver's way, he was now resolved to venture himself upon the ocean; and the emperor and most of his ministers were glad of the resolution. Five hundred



workmen were employed to make sails for the boat, by quilting thirteen folds of their strongest linen together. He twisted ten, twenty, or thirty of their strongest cables together for ropes, and a great stone served for an anchor. He formed masts and oars from some of the largest forest-trees, and the tallow of three hundred oxen was used in greasing the boat.

After every thing was in readiness, Mr. Gulliver took leave of the emperor and the royal family, by whom he was presented with fifty purses of gold, and a full-length picture of his majesty. He stored the boat with the carcasses of a hundred oxen, three hundred sheep, as much ready-dressed meat as three hundred cooks could provide, and bread and drink in proportion. He also took six cows and two bulls alive; the same number of ewes and rams, with a good bundle of hay and a bag of corn.

Thus equipped, he set sail on the 24th of September, in the morning, and in the evening descried an island about four leagues distant. He advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee-side of it. He then took some refreshment, and went to rest. He ate his breakfast in the morning before the sun was up, and heaving anchor, steered the same course he had done the day before. He discovered nothing all this day, but upon the next he descried a sail; he hailed her, but got no answer; yet as he found he gained upon her, he made all the sail he could, and in half an hour she espied him, and hung out her antient. He came up with her at six in the evening, and was overjoyed to see her English colours; he put his live-stock into his pockets, and got on board with all his cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan, and was commanded by Mr. John Riddel, who, when Mr. Gulliver

informed him of his adventures, imagined he had lost his wits; whereupon, taking his oxen and sheep out of his pockets, after great astonishment, he clearly convinced the crew of his veracity.

The remainder of his voyage was very prosperous, for they arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April.

## 7.

*The Storm.*

Hark! the wind's loud sullen roar,  
Behold the huge and foaming wave;  
How happy we, who, safe on shore,  
Can view, yet all its horrors brave.

See yonder sail, that bending low,  
Appears each moment to be lost,  
This moment scarce a speck can show,  
The next is high on billows tost.

How will your little bark withstand  
These angry winds, this raging sea;  
But trifling aid can human hand  
Afford thee in this misery.

Yet shall thy trembling inmates' cry  
Be heard in this sad threat'ning hour;  
Nor shall the elements defy  
The strength of God's superior power.

*The Elephant.*

The elephant is found both in Africa and India. It is the principal beast of burden in the east, and is remarkable for its strength and sagacity.

The young elephant is very playful, delighting to gambol and frolic, and displaying the exuberance of its feelings by a thousand antics. The following instance of the sagacity of elephants occurred at Enon in South Africa. — » A troop of these animals came down, one dark and rainy evening, close to the outskirts of a village, and made a tremendous noise all night. Next morning, on examining the spot where they had heard the elephants, the inhabitants discovered the cause of all this nocturnal uproar. There was a ditch or trench about four or five feet in width, and nearly fourteen in depth. Into this unfinished trench, which at present contained no water, one of the elephants had fallen. How he had got in was easy to conjecture, but how, being once in, he had contrived to get out again was the marvel.

On looking again, the edges of the trench were found deeply indented with numerous traces of footmarks. The other elephants, it seems had stationed themselves on either side of the hole, some of them kneeling, and others on their feet; and thus, by united efforts, and probably after many failures, they had hoisted their unlucky brother out of the pit.”

*John Barleycorn.*

There was three kings into the east,  
Three kings both great and high,

And they had sworn a solemn oath  
John Barleycorn should die.

They took a plough and plough'd him down,  
Put clods upon his head.  
And they hae 1) sworn a solemn oath  
John Barleycorn was dead.

But the cheerful Spring came kindly on,  
And show'rs began to fall;  
John Barleycorn got up again,  
And sore surpris'd them all.

The sultry suns of Summer came,  
And he grew thick and strong,  
His head weel 2) arm'd wi' 3) pointed spears,  
That no one should him wrong.

The sober Autumn enter'd mild,  
When he grew wan and pale;  
His bending joints and drooping head  
Show'd he began to fail.

His colour sicken'd more and more,  
He faded into age,  
And then his enemies began  
To show their deadly rage.

They've taen 4) a weapon, long and sharp,  
And cut him by the knee;  
Then ty'd him fast upon a cart,  
Like a rogue for forgery.

1) *Hae*, have. 2) *Weel*, well. 3) *Wi'*, with. 4) *Taen*, taken.

They laid him down upon his back,  
 And cudgell'd him full sore;  
 They hung him up before the storm,  
 And turn'd him o'er and o'er.

They filled up a darksome pit  
 With water to the brim,  
 They heaved in John Barleycorn,  
 There let him sink or swim.

They laid him out upon the floor,  
 To work him farther woe,  
 And still, as signs of life appear'd,  
 They toss'd him to and fro.

They wasted, o'er a scorching flame,  
 The marrow of his bones;  
 But a miller us'd him worst of all,  
 For he crush'd him between two stones.

And they hae taen his very heart's blood,  
 And drank it round and round;  
 And still the more and more they drank,  
 Their joy did more abound.

John Barleycorn was a hero bold,  
 Of noble entreprize,  
 For if you do but taste his blood,  
 'T will make your courage rise.

'T will make a man forget his woe;  
 'T will heighten all his joy:  
 'T will make the widow's heart to sing,  
 Tho' the tear were in her eye.

Then let us toast John Barleycorn,  
 Each man a glass in hand;  
 And may his great posterity  
 Ne'er fail in old Scotland.

ROB. BURNS.

## 10.

*The story of Macbeth.*

Soon after the Scots and Picts had become one people, there was a king of Scotland called Duncan, a very good old man. He had two sons; one was called Malcolm, and the other Donaldbane. But King Duncan was too old to lead out his army to battle, and his sons were too young to help him.

At this time Scotland, and indeed France and England, and the other countries of Europe, were much harassed by the Danes. These were a very fierce, warlike people, who sailed from one place to another and landed their armies on the coast, burning and destroying every thing wherever they came. They were heathens, and did not believe in the Bible, but thought of nothing but battle and slaughter, and making plunder. When they came to countries where the inhabitants were cowardly, they took possession of the land, as the Saxons took possession of Britain. At other times, they landed with their soldiers, took what spoil they could find, burned the houses, and then got on board, hoisted sails, and away again. They did so much mischief, that people put up prayers to God in the churches to deliver them from the rage of the Danes.

Now, it happened in King Duncan's time, that a great fleet of these Danes came to Scotland and landed their men in Fife, and threatened to take possession of that province.

So a numerous Scottish army was levied to go to fight with them. The King, as I told you, was too old to command his army, and his sons were too young. So he sent out one of his near relations, who was called Macbeth, he was son of Finel, who was Thane, as it was called, of Glamis. The governor of provinces were at that time, in Scotland, called Thaners; they were afterwards termed earls.

This Macbeth, who was a brave soldier, put himself at the head of the Scottish army, and marched against the Danes. And he carried with him a relation of his own, called Banquo, who was Thane of Lochaber, and was also a very brave man. So there was a great battle fought between the Danes and the Scots, and Macbeth and Banquo defeated the Danes, and drove them back to their ships, leaving a great many of their soldiers both killed and wounded. Then Macbeth and his army marched back to a town in the North of Scotland, called Forres, rejoicing on account of their victory.

Now there lived at this time three old women in the town of Forres, whom people thought were witches, and supposed they could tell what was to come to pass. Nobody would believe such folly now-a-days, except low and ignorant creatures, such as those who consult gipsies in order to have their fortunes told; but in those early times the people were much more ignorant, and even great men, like Macbeth, believed that such persons as these witches of Forres could tell what was to come to pass afterwards, and listened to the nonsense they told them, as if the old women had really been prophetesses. The old women saw that they were respected and feared, so that they were tempted to impose upon people, by pretending to tell what was to happen to them, and they got presents for doing so.

So the three old women went and stood by the way-side, in a great moor or heath near Forres, and waited till Macbeth came up. And then, stepping before him as he was marching at the head of his soldiers, the first woman said, »All hail, Macbeth — hail to thee, Thane of Glamis.» The second said, »All hail, Macbeth — hail to thee, Thane of Cawdor.» Then the third, wishing to pay him a higher compliment than the other two, said, »All hail, Macbeth, that shall be king of Scotland.» Macbeth was very much surprised to hear them give him these titles; and while he was wondering what they could mean, Banquo stepped forward, and asked them whether they had nothing to tell about him as well as about Macbeth. And they said that he should not be so great as Macbeth, but that though he himself should never be a king, yet his children should succeed to the throne of Scotland, and be kings for a great number of years.

Before Macbeth was recovered from his surprise, there came a messenger to tell him, that his father was dead, so that he was become Thane of Glamis by inheritance. And there came a second messenger from the King, to thank Macbeth for the great victory over the Danes, and tell him that the Thane of Cawdor had rebelled against the king, and that the king had taken his office from him, and had sent to make Macbeth Thane of Cawdor as well as Glamis. Thus the two first old women seemed to be right in giving him these titles. I dare say they knew something of the death of Macbeth's father, and that the government of Cawdor was intended for Macbeth, though he had not heard of it.

However, Macbeth seeing a part of their words come to be true, began to think how he was to bring the rest to pass, and make himself king, as well as Thane of

Glamis and Cawdor. And Macbeth had a wife, who was a very ambitious wicked woman, and when she found out that her husband thought of raising himself up to be king of Scotland, she encouraged him by all means in her power, and persuaded him that the only way to get possession of the crown was to kill the good old King Duncan. Macbeth was very unwilling to commit so great a crime, for he knew what a good king Duncan had been, and he recollected how he was his relation, and had been always very kind to him; and had intrusted him with the command of his army, and had bestowed on him the government or thanedom of Cawdor. But his wife continued telling him what a foolish cowardly thing it was in him not to take the opportunity of making himself King, when it was in his power to gain what the witches promised him. So the wicked advice of his wife, and the prophecy of these wretched old women, at last brought Macbeth to think of murdering his King and his friend. The way in which he accomplished his crime, made it still more abominable.

Macbeth invited Duncan to come to visit him at a great castle near Inverness; and the good King, who had no suspicions of his kinsman, accepted the invitation very willingly. Macbeth and his Lady received the King and all his retinue with much appearance of joy, and made a great feast, as a subject would do to make his king welcome. About the middle of the night, the King desired to go to his apartment, and Macbeth conducted him to a fine room, which had been prepared for him. Now, it was the custom, in those barbarious times, that wherever the King slept, two armed men slept in the same chamber, in order to defend his person, in case he should be attacked by any one during the night. But the wicked Lady Macbeth had made these two watchmen drink a

great deal of wine, and had besides put some drugs into the liquor, so that when they went to the King's apartment they both fell asleep, and slept so soundly, that nothing could awaken them.

Then the cruel Macbeth came into King Duncan's bedroom about two in the morning. It was a terrible stormy night; but the noise of the wind and of the thunder could not awaken the King, as he was old and weary with his journey; neither could it awaken the two sentinels. They all slept soundly. So Macbeth having come into the room, and stepped gently over the floor, he took the two dirks which belonged to the sentinels, and stabbed poor old King Duncan to the heart, and that so effectually, that he died without giving a groan. Then Macbeth put the bloody daggers into the hands of the sentinels and he daubed their faces over with blood, that it might appear as if they had committed the murder. Macbeth was frightened at what he had done, but his wife made him wash his hands and go to bed.

Early in the morning, the nobles and gentlemen who attended on the King, assembled in the great hall of the castle, and there they began to talk of what a dreadful storm it had been the night before. But Macbeth could scarcely understand what they said, for he was thinking on something much worse and more frightful than the storm, and was wondering what would be said when they heard of the murder. They waited for some time, but finding the King did not come from his apartment, one of the noblement went to see whether he was well or not. But when he came into the room, he found poor King Duncan lying stiff, and cold, and bloody, and the two sentinels, with their dirks or daggers covered with blood, both fast asleep. As soon as the Scottish nobles saw this terrible sight, they were greatly astonished and enraged;

and Macbeth made believe as if he were more enraged than any of them, and, drawing his sword, before any one could prevent him, he killed the two attendants of the King who slept in the bed-chamber, pretending to think they had been guilty of murdering King Duncan.

When Malcolm and Donaldbane, the two sons of the good King, saw their father slain in this manner within Macbeth's castle, they became afraid that they might be put to death likewise and fled away out of Scotland; for notwithstanding all the excuses which he could make, they still believed that Macbeth had killed their father. Donaldbane fled into some distant islands, but Malcolm, the eldest son of Duncan, went to the court of England, where he begged for assistance from the English King, to place him on the throne of Scotland as his father's successor.

In the meantime, Macbeth took possession of the kingdom of Scotland, and thus all his wicked wishes seemed to be fulfilled. But he was not happy. He began to reflect how wicked he had been in killing his friend and benefactor, and how some other person, as ambitious as he was himself, might do the same thing to him. He remembered too that the old women had said, that the children of Banquo should succeed to the throne after his death, and therefore he concluded that Banquo might be tempted to conspire against him, as he had himself done against King Duncan. The wicked always think other people are as bad as themselves. In order to prevent this supposed danger, he hired ruffians to watch in the wood, where Banquo and his eldest son Fleance sometimes used to walk in the evening, with instructions to attack them, and kill both father and son. The villains did as they were ordered by Macbeth; but while they were killing Banquo, the boy Fleance made his escape from their

wicked hands, and fled from Scotland into Wales. And it is said, that long afterwards, his children came to possess the Scottish crown.

Macbeth was not the more happy that he had slain his brave friend and cousin Banquo. He knew that men began to suspect the wicked deeds which he had done, and he was constantly afraid that some one would put him to death as he had done his old sovereign; or that Malcolm would obtain assistance from the King of England, and come to make war against him, and take from him the Scottish kingdom. So, in this great perplexity of mind, he thought he would go to the old women, whose words had first put into his mind the desire of becoming a King. It is to be supposed, that he offered them presents, and that they were cunning enough to study how to give him some answer, which should make him continue in the belief that they could prophesy what was to happen in future times. So they answered to him that he should not be conquered or lose the crown of Scotland, until a great forest, called Birnam Wood, should come to attack him in a strong castle situated on a high hill called Dunsinane. Now, the hill of Dunsinane is upon the one side of a valley, and the forest of Birnam is upon the other. There are twelve miles distance betwixt them, and besides that, Macbeth thought it was impossible that the trees could ever come to the assault of the castle. He therefore resolved to fortify his castle on the hill of Dunsinane very strongly, as being a place in which he would always be sure to be safe. For this purpose he caused all his great nobility and thanes to send in stones, and wood and other things wanted in building, and to drag them with oxen up to the top of the steep hill where he was building the castle.

Now, among other nobles who were obliged to send

oxen, and horses, and materials, to this laborious work, was one called Macduff, the Thane of Fife. Macbeth was afraid of this thane, for he was very powerful, and was accounted both brave and wise; and Macbeth thought he would most probably join with Prince Malcolm, if ever he should come from England with an army. The King, therefore, had a private hatred against the Thane of Fife, which he kept concealed from all men, until he should have some opportunity of putting him to death as he had done Duncan and Banquo. Macduff, on his part, kept upon his guard, and went to the King's court as seldom as he could, thinking himself never safe unless in his own castle of Kennoway, which is on the coast of Fife, near to the mouth of the Frith of Forth. It happened, however, that the King had summoned several of his nobles, and Macduff, the Thane of Fife, amongst others, to attend him at his new castle of Dunsinane; and they were all obliged to come, none dared stay behind. Now, the King was to give the nobles a great entertainment, and preparations were made for it. In the meantime, Macbeth rode out with a few attendants, to see the oxen drag the wood and the stones up the hill, for enlarging and strengthening the castle. So they saw most of the oxen trudging up the hill with great difficulty, for the ascent is very steep, and the burdens were heavy, and the weather was extremely hot. At length Macbeth saw a pair of oxen so tired that they could go no farther up the hill, but fell down under their load. Then the King was very angry, and demanded to know who it was among his Thanes that had sent oxen so weak and so unfit for labour, when he had so much work for them to do. Some one replied that the oxen belonged to Macduff, the Thane of Fife. »Then,» said the King in great anger, »since the Thane of Fife sends such worthless cattle

as these to do my labour, I will put his own neck into the yoke, and make him drag the burdens himself.»

There was a friend of Macduff who heard these angry expressions of the King, and hastened to communicate them to the Thane of Fife, who was walking in the hall of the King's castle while dinner was preparing. The instant, that Macduff heard what the King had said, he knew he had no time to lose in making his escape, for whenever Macbeth threatened to do mischief to any one, he was sure to keep his word.

So Macduff snatched up from the table a loaf of bread, called for his horses and his servants, and was galloping back to his own province of Fife before Macbeth and the rest of the nobility were returned to the castle. The first question which the King asked was, what had become of Macduff? and being informed that he had fled from Dunsinane, he ordered a body of his guards to attend him, and mounted on horseback himself to pursue the thane, with the purpose of putting him to death.

Macduff, in the mean time, fled as fast as horses' feet could carry him; but he was so ill provided with money for his expenses, when he came to the great ferry over the river Tay, he had nothing to give to the boatmen, who took him across, excepting the loaf of bread which he had taken from the King's table. The place was called, for a long time afterwards, the Ferry of the Loaf.

When Macduff got into his province of Fife, which is on the other side of the Tay, he rode on faster than before, towards his own castle of Kennoway, which, as I told you, stands close by the seaside, and when he reached it, the King and his guards were not far behind. Macduff ordered his wife to shut the gates of the castle, draw up the draw-bridge, and on no account permit the King or any of his soldiers to enter. In the mean time,

he went to the small harbour belonging to the castle, caused a ship which was lying there to be fitted out for sea in all haste, and got on board himself, in order to escape from Macbeth.

In the mean time, Macbeth summoned the lady to surrender the castle, and to deliver up her husband. But Lady Macduff, who was a wise and a brave woman, made many excuses and delays, until she knew that her husband was safely on board the ship, and had sailed from the harbour. Then she spoke boldly from the wall of the castle to the King, who was standing before the gate still demanding entrance, with many threats of what he would do if Macduff was not given up to him. "Do you see," she said, yon white sail upon the sea? Yonder goes Macduff to the court of England. You will never see him again, till he comes back with young Prince Malcolm to pull you down from the throne, and to put you to death. You will never be able to put your yoke, as you threatened, on the Thane of Fife's neck."

Some say that Macbeth was so much incensed at this bold answer, that he and his guards attacked the castle and took it, killing the brave lady and all whom they found there. But others say, and I believe more truly, that the King, seeing that the castle of Kennoway was very strong, and that Macduff had escaped from him, and was embarked for England, departed back to Dunsinane without attempting to take Macduff's Castle of Kennoway. The ruins of the castle are still to be seen.

There reigned at that time in England a very good King, called Edward the Confessor. I told you that Prince Malcolm, the son of Duncan, was at his court soliciting assistance to recover the Scottish throne. The arrival of Macduff greatly aided the success of his petition; for the English King knew that Macduff was a brave and a wise

man. As he assured Edward that the Scots were tired of the cruel Macbeth, and would join Prince Malcolm if he were to enter Scotland at the head of an army, the King ordered a great warrior, called Siward, Earl of Northumberland, to enter Scotland with an army, and assist Prince Malcolm in the recovery of his father's crown.

Then it happened as Macduff had said, for the Scottish thanes and nobles would not fight for Macbeth, but joined Prince Malcolm, and Macduff against him; so that at length he shut himself up in his castle of Dunsinane, where he thought himself safe, according to the old women's prophecy, until Birnam Wood should come against him. He boasted of this to his followers, and encouraged them to make a valiant defence, assuring them of certain victory. At this time Malcolm and Macduff were come as far as Birnam Wood, and lay encamped there with their army. The next morning, when they were to march across the broad valley to attack the castle of Dunsinane, Macduff advised that every soldier should cut down a bough of a tree and carry it in his hand, that the enemy might not be able to see how many men were coming against them.

Now, the sentinel who stood on Macbeth's castle-wall, when he saw all these branches which the soldiers of Prince Malcolm carried, ran to the King, and informed him that the Wood of Birnam was moving towards the castle of Dunsinane. The King at first called him a liar, and threatened to put him to death; but when he looked from the walls himself, and saw the appearance of a forest approaching from Birnam, he knew the hour of his destruction was come. His followers, too, began to be disheartened, and to fly from the castle, seeing their master had lost all hopes.



Macbeth, however, recollected his own bravery, and sallied desperately out at the head of the few followers who remained faithful to him. He was killed after a furious resistance, fighting hand to hand with Macduff in the thick of the battle. Prince Malcolm mounted the throne of Scotland, and reigned long and prosperously. He rewarded Macduff by declaring that his descendant should lead the vanguard of the Scottish army in battle, and place the crown on the King's head at the ceremony of coronation. King Malcolm also created the Thanes of Scotland earls, after the title adopted in the Court of England.

## 11.

## THE CHILDREN IN THE WOOD;

OR,

*The Norfolk Gentleman's last Will and Testament.*

Now ponder well, you parents dear,  
 These words which I shall write;  
 A doleful story you shall hear,  
 In time brought forth to light.  
 A gentleman of good account  
 In Norfolk dwelt of late,  
 Who did in honour fur surmount  
 Most men of his estate.

Sore sick he was, and like to die,  
 No help his life could save;  
 His wife by him as sick did lie,  
 And both possess'd one grave.

No love between these two was lost,  
 Each was to other kind:  
 In love they liv'd, in love they died,  
 And left two babes behind:

The one a fine and pretty boy,  
 Not passing three years old;  
 The other a girl, more young than he,  
 And made in beauty's mould.  
 The father left his little son,  
 As plainly doth appear,  
 When he to perfect age should come,  
 Three hundred pounds a year;

And to his little daughter Jane  
 Five hundred pounds in gold,  
 To be paid down on marriage day,  
 Which might not be controll'd.  
 But if the children chance to die  
 Ere they to age should come,  
 Their uncle should possess their wealth;  
 For so the will did run.

»Now, brother," said the dying man,  
 »Look to my children dear;  
 Be good unto my boy and girl,  
 No friends else have they here:  
 To God and you I recommend  
 My children dear this day;  
 But little while be sure we have  
 Within this world to stay.

You must be father and mother both,  
 And uncle, all in one;

God knows what will become of them  
 When I am dead and gone."  
 With that bespake their mother dear:  
 » O brother kind," quoth she,  
 » You are the man must bring our babes  
 To wealth or misery.

And if you keep them carefully;  
 Then God will you reward;  
 But if you otherwise should deal,  
 God will your deeds regard."  
 With lips as cold as any stone  
 They kiss'd their children small:  
 » God bless you both, my children dear;"  
 With that the tears did fall.

These speeches then their brother spake  
 To this sick couple there:  
 » The keeping of your little ones,  
 Sweet sister, do not fear;  
 God never prosper me nor mine,  
 Nor aught else that I have,  
 If I do wrong your children dear,  
 When you are laid in grave!"

Their parents being dead and gone,  
 The children home he takes,  
 And brings them strait unto his house,  
 Where much of them he makes.  
 He had not kept these pretty babes  
 A twelvemonth and a day,  
 But for their wealth he did devise  
 To make them both away.

He bargain'd with two ruffians strong,  
 Which were of furious mood,  
 That they should take these children young,  
 And slay them in a wood.  
 He told his wife an artful tale,  
 He would the children send  
 To be brought up in fair London,  
 With one that was his friend.

Away then went those pretty babes,  
 Rejoicing at that tide,  
 Rejoicing with a merry mind,  
 They should on cock-horse 1) ride.  
 They prate and prattle pleasantly,  
 As they rode on the way,  
 To those that should their butchers be,  
 And work their lives' decay.

So that the pretty speech they had,  
 Made Murder's heart relent;  
 And they that undertook the deed  
 Full sore did now repent.  
 Yet one of them, more hard of heart,  
 Did vow to do his charge.  
 Because the wretch that hired him  
 Had paid him very large.

The other won't agree thereto,  
 So here they fall to strife;  
 With one another they did fight  
 About the children's life.  
 And he that was of mildest mood  
 Did slay the other there,

1) Stokpaardje.

Within an unfrequented wood;  
The babes did quake for fear!

He took the children by the hand,  
Tears standing in their eye,  
And bade them straitway follow him,  
And look they did not cry;  
And two long miles he led them on,  
While they for food complain:  
»Stay here,» quoth he, »I'll bring you bread,  
When I come back again.»

These pretty babes with hand in hand  
Went wandering up and down;  
But never more could see the man  
Approaching from the town.  
Their pretty lips with blackberries  
Were all besmear'd and dyed;  
And when they saw the darksome night,  
They sat them down and cried.

Thus wander'd these poor innocents  
Till death did end their grief;  
In one another's arms they died,  
As wanting due relief.  
No burial this pretty pair  
Of any man receives,  
Till Robin-red-breast 1) piously  
Did cover them with leaves.

And now the heavy wrath of God  
Upon their uncle fell;

1) Het Roodborstje.

Yea, fearful fiends did haunt his house,  
His conscience felt a hell.  
His barns were fir'd, his goods consum'd,  
His lands were barren made,  
His cattle died within the field,  
And nothing with him staid.

And, in a voyage to Portugal,  
Two of his sons did die;  
And, to conclude, himself was brought  
To want and misery:  
He pawn'd and mortgag'd all his land  
Ere seven years came about;  
And now at length this wicked act  
Did by this means come out:

The fellow that did take in hand  
These children for to kill,  
Was for a robbery judg'd to die,  
As was God's blessed will;  
Who did confess the very truth,  
As here has been display'd,  
Their uncle having died in jail,  
Where he for debt was laid.

You that be executors made,  
And overseers eke,  
Of children that be fatherless,  
And infants mild and meek;  
Take you example by this thing,  
And give to each his right;  
Lest God with such like misery,  
Your wicked minds requite.

*The Ourang-outang.*

I heard a rustling amongst the jungle, and prepared my carbine, being concealed by a projection of rock.

Thinking it was a tiger I put a ball, over the large shot, in my carbine, and making a rest on the rocks for my gun, I determined not to fire till he attacked me; then, if I missed killing him, I was to swim out to the boat, which was rapidly approaching. Still as I was hidden, I hoped I should escape undiscovered. Taking my cap off, I peeped over the rock; the rustling noise in the bushes continued; when, to my astonishment, I saw, not a tiger, but a gray, hairy old man. He removed the bushes, and, after cautiously surveying the place, stooped down, and came out at the opening of the little creek. When he stood up, he was the strangest looking figure I had ever seen; tall, lean and emaciated, not at all resembling any people within my knowledge. He was remarkably long limbed, and had no other weapon than a large club, such as is used by the South Sea Islanders. His face was black, with grisly hair, and deeply furrowed with wrinkles. His figure seemed bent with age and infirmities, yet he walked with long strides over the rough ground. There was a wild and sullen malignity of expression in his eyes, more like those of a demon than of a man. When he came to the margin of the sea, in an opposite direction to me, he seated himself on a rock, took up a sharp stone, knocked off the limpets and muscles, and swallowed them fast and voraciously. After this, he gathered a large leaf, put a heap of oysters and muscles on it, and folded it up. Then, looking towards the sea, with his eyes fixed for some time on the boat, he washed his

hands, and returned, somewhat more nimbly, to the place whence he had issued, and disappeared.

I went after him, and discovered, upon crawling under a thick bush, a narrow winding path, a good deal foot-worn. I heard the grisled old savage before me; and, unseen myself, from time to time, caught glimpses of him. Several branches of trees, under which he could not pass without stooping, he beat down, or broke off with a blow of his club. I tracked him for a short distance through the wood in silence. He then branched off to the right, in the direction of the great morass, passed the channel of a mountain-stream, ascended a bank, and then, coming to a rock fifteen or sixteen feet in perpendicular height, he climbed up an old moss-grown pine-tree. When he had mounted the stem of the tree, somewhat higher than the rock, he clung with his arms and legs to a horizontal branch; and, as a sailor works himself along the stays of a mast, by alternately shifting his limbs, he arrived above the summit of the rock, when suspending his body by his hands, he let himself gently down, and walked on.

I followed in the same manner, cautiously avoiding his seeing or hearing me. He crossed a ridge of rocks, comparatively open. There was little or no underwood. The old man stopped, and looking attentively at a huge pine which had fallen from age, out of which, in its half-decomposed prostrate trunk, grew a line of young pines, thus perpetuating its species, he appeared to be measuring their length with a stick. He pulled up four of them by the roots, stripped them of their branches, secured them together with a fillet of wire-grass, put them on his left shoulder, and proceeded onwards to a small space, in which were the wild mango and banana. He examined the fruit of them, and smelt them to find if they were

ripe; and gathering a plantain, which did not readily peel, he threw it away. He now made many turns, I following him as close as I could, without risking discovery, till he came to an open piece of ground, which had been neatly levelled, the grass, weeds, and bushes cleared away, and in one corner, under the shelter of a remarkably thick and beautiful tree covered with white blossoms, I observed a neat hut, built of canes wattled together.

I looked round with admiration, marvelling at the good taste with which the recluse had selected a place for his hermitage. On one side was a rocky bank, covered with tamarind and wild nutmeg, perfuming the air. There was an excavation in the lower part of the bank, partially screened by three tall, straight-stemmed betel-trees, with their shining, silvery-white bark; they shone resplendently-beautiful, and looked like the Graces of the forest. At the back of the hermitage was a wild waste of jungle, in which I distinguished tamarind, nutmeg, cactus, acacia, banyans, and the dark foliage of the bamboo.

The old savage, having laid the bundle of young fir-trees against his dwelling, stooped down and entered the low door on his hands and knees; for the palmetta-leaved roof came down to within two feet of the ground. While I was attentively surveying and marking the spot, determined on visiting it again, and endeavouring to look into the hut, under cover of a thick bush on the margin of the cleared space, a rustle among the bushes made me turn my eyes to the ground, when I saw the diamond-like eye, sparkling from the black, square head of a cobra-di-capella. I shouted out, and the snake, without appearing alarmed, slowly retreated into the opposite bushes.

I turned round, and was startled at seeing the man

advance with his club firmly clenched in both hands, and swinging over his head, like a quarter-staff. The gaunt old wretch, by the increased malignancy of his eye, the grinding of his teeth, and the wrinkles on his narrow brow, was evidently proceeding to attack me. My carbine, cocked, was in my left hand, but ere I could get it to my shoulder, he made one huge stride, and his club was descending on my head, when, stepping a pace back, I discharged my piece under his left arm-pit, lodging the whole contents in his body. He sprung up into the air, and, before I could retire, fell slap upon me.

With some difficulty I extricated myself, and saw that my ball had passed right through him, entering his heart, as I suppose, which had caused that convulsive spring. He bled profusely.

I then went into his house. It differed little in the interior from those of the other natives of the island, only it had a greater degree of neatness and appearance of comfort. At one end of it was a partition, very ingeniously fastened, a security, I conjectured, against thieves when he was absent. There was good store of roots and fruits, carefully spread out to prevent their rotting.

Hearing musquets discharged, and voices hallooing, I was surprised at finding I was much nearer the sea than I had anticipated; but on retracing my steps, I accounted for it, by the circuitous path the wild man had taken me to his abode. I hastened back to the beach, and found Van and his canoe. He had been directed to the spot by the men of our boat, which was now drawing nigh; then, alarmed at not seeing me, together with the report of my carbine, he ordered musquets to be fired.

» Well met, Van” said I, here I have procured you a magnificent subject to work upon.” I then told him of my encounter with the wild man.

» Where is he? » exclaimed Van.

As I led him to the spot, he eagerly followed close at my heels, and, when he approached the body, cried out, » What! it is an orang-outang; the first fullgrown one I ever saw, and really very like the genus *homo*. But feel, he has thirteen ribs. I'll preserve his skeleton, and present it to the zoological garden at Amsterdam. It is a rare species.»

## Vijfde Afdeeling.

### SPREEKWIJZEN EN ZAMENSPRAKEN.

Laat mij het, als het u be- lieft, zien.	Pray, sir, let me see it.
Wees zoo goed, haar te zeg- gen.	Please to tell her.
Zoo als het hem behaagt.	Just as he pleases.
Niet zonder uw verlof.	Not without your permission.
Vergeef mij, dat ik u in de rede val.	Excuse me for interrupting you.
Hij heeft een verzoek aan ons.	He has to request a favour of us.
Zij zoude mij zeer verpligten.	She would greatly oblige me.
Ik ben u zeer verpligt.	I am very much obliged to you.
Weiger ons verzoek niet.	Do not refuse our request.
Om 's hemels wil.	For Heaven's sake.
Sta haar deze gunst toe.	Grant her this favour.
Het is slechts eene geringe dienst.	It is but a trifling service.

Beschik over mij.	Dispose of me.
Gaarne.	Voluntarily.
Gij hebt slechts te bevelen.	Do but command.
Zoudt gij zoo goed willen zijn, ons deze dienst te bewijzen?	Would you be so kind as to do us this service?
Doe ons de eer aan.	Do us the honour.
Ik zal er hem dankbaar voor zijn.	I shall be thankful to him for it.
Hij is er verblijd om.	He is glad of it.
Het zal hem veel genoeg doen.	It will give him great sa- tisfaction.
Verlaat u op ons.	Depend on us.
Gij kunt op zijne hulp ver- trouwen.	You may depend on his as- sistance.
Gij kunt u op ons verlaten.	You may rely on us.
Ik stem er in toe.	I agree to it.
Hij heeft er niets tegen.	He has no objection to it.

## 2.

Zeer gaarne.	Very readily.
Hij overlaadt mij met beleefd- heden.	He overpowers me with ci- vilities.
Dat zal haar beschamen.	That will make her blush.
In tegendeel.	On the contrary.
Het doet niets ter zake.	It matters not, never mind.
Het spijt mij.	I am sorry for it.
Hij bidt u om vergiffenis.	He begs your pardon.
Is zij boos op haren zoon?	Is she angry with her son?
Hij is altijd welkom.	He is always welcome.
Dat gaat niet aan.	That won't do.
Weiger mij deze gunst niet.	Do not deny me this favour.
Wat gaat het hem aan?	What is that to him?
Erger er u niet over.	Be not vexed at it.

Hoe vaart gij, mijnheer?	How do you do, sir?
Zoo tamelijk.	Tolerably well. So, so.
Niet heel wel.	Indifferently.
Hij is ongesteld.	He is indisposed.
Het verheugt mij u in wel- stand te zien.	I am glad to see you in good health.

## 3.

Is het waar?	Is it true?
Het zal eene leugen zijn.	It will be a lie.
Ik weet het zeker.	I am sure of it.
Zonder twijfel.	Without doubt, doubtlessly.
Is er heden nieuws?	Is there any news to day?
Hebt gij mij iets te zeggen?	Have you got any thing to tell me?
Hebt gij bericht van uwen neef?	Have you heard from your cousin?
Op mijne eer.	Upon my honour.
Zoo waar ik leef.	As sure as I live.
Hij wil ons iets diets maken.	He will make us believe it.
Het is slechts een gerucht.	It is but a report.
Het is een stadspraatje.	It is a town-talk.
Is het u ernst?	Are you serious?
Gij dwaalt zeker.	You are certainly mistaken.
Inderdaad.	Indeed. In fact.
Waarlijk.	Truly.
Het is eene uitgemaakte zaak.	It is a fact.
Gij schertst.	You jest.
Schertst gij niet?	Do you not joke?
Ik heb gelijk.	I am right.
Hij heeft ongelijk.	He is wrong.
Hij vertelt leugens.	He tells fibs.
Het is alles onzin.	It is all nonsense.

## 4.

Hoe kunt gij denken, dat het waar is?	How can you imagine that to be true?
Hij had er geen denkbeeld van.	He had no notion of it.
Het was te hoog voor hem.	It was beyond his conception.
Wat moet er gedaan worden?	What is to be done?
Wat kan er aan gedaan worden?	How is it to be remedied?
Er klopt iemand aan de deur.	Somebody knocks at the door.
Binnen!	Enter. Come in!
Ik weet niet waartoe ik besluiten zal.	I do not know what to resolve upon.
Ga, als het u belieft, vooruit.	Please to walk before.
Nader niet.	Do not approach.
Laat hem niet van de plaats gaan.	Let him not stir.
Laat ons naar boven gaan.	Let us walk up stairs.
Laat haar naar beneden gaan.	Let her come down stairs.
Hij moet zich in acht nemen.	Let him have a care.

## 5.

Zorg dat gij wegkomt!	Get you gone!
Ik moet maken dat ik wegkom.	I must be gone.
Spreek hardop.	Speak out.
Ik ben er zeer verblijd over.	I am overjoyed at it.
Spreek langzaam.	Speak slowly.
Met wien sprak hij?	Whom did he talk to?
Over wien sprak zij?	Whom did she talk of?
Zij is boos.	She is in a passion.
Het is niet om uit te staan.	It is beyond hearing.

Laat hem begaan.	Let him alone for that.
Het is het beste.	It is the best way.
Maak er een einde aan.	Have done.
Ga uit mijne oogen.	Get out of my sight.

## 6.

God dank!	Thank God!
Dat verhoede God!	God forbid!
Dat geve God!	God grant!
Dadelijk.	Presently.
Tot morgen.	Until to-morrow.
Zoodra mogelijk.	As fast as possible.
Ten hoogste.	At the most.
Plotseling.	On a sudden, suddenly.
Te regter tijd.	To the purpose.
Nu het mij invalt.	Now I think of it.
Ontijdig.	Unseasonably.
Bijna.	Nearly, almost.
Dit uitgezonderd.	Save that, except that.
Langzamerhand.	By degrees.
Onder ons.	Between us.
Naar de beurt.	By turns.
Als de beurt aan mij is.	In my turn.
Naar mijnen smaak.	To my taste. To my liking.
Ongaarne.	Reluctantly.
Tot wederziens.	Till we meet again.
Regts, links.	To the right, to the left.
Met opzet.	Purposely.
Zooals gewoonlijk.	As usual.

## 7.

Goedkoop.	Cheap.
Tot een' redelijken prijs.	At a reasonable price.



Met luider stem.	In a loud tone of voice.
Met eene zachte stem.	In a low tone of voice.
Wat mij betreft.	As to me, as for me.
Iets tot stand brengen.	To bring any thing to bear.
Des noods.	In case of need.
Bij het aanbreken van den dag.	At day break.
Bij het invallen van den nacht.	When night comes on.
In staat.	Able.
Wanneer men hem zoo hoort spreken.	To hear him speak in this manner.
Door veel te lezen.	By dint of reading.
Van verre.	From afar.
Digtbij.	Near at hand.
Bij dag.	In the day time.
Bij nacht.	By night.
Met geweld.	By force.
Goed geluimd.	Good-humoured.
Slecht geluimd.	Bad-humoured.
Goedaardig.	Good-natured.
Nog eens zoo breed.	As broad again.
Nog eens zoo groot.	As tall again.
Nog eens zoo lang.	As long again.
Nog eens zoo veel.	As much again.

## 8.

Aanstonds.	Directly.
Onmiddellijk.	Immediately.
Op eenmaal.	At once.
Werkelijk.	Indeed.
Mondeling.	By word of mouth.
Terug.	Back.
Van aanzien.	By sight.

Uit gebrek aan tijd, aan geld.	For want of time, of money.
Jaarlijks, dagelijks.	Yearly, daily.
Schriftelijk.	In writing.
Uit het hoofd.	By heart.
Op het punt.	About.
In plaats van.	Instead of.
Ten eerste.	Firstly.
Ten tweede.	Secondly.
Ten laatste.	Lastly.
Voorwaarts, achterwaarts.	Forward, backward.
Intusschen.	Meanwhile.
Onderweg.	On the way.
In de open lucht.	In the open air.
Op klaarlichten dag.	At broad day-light.

## 9.

Onlangs.	Lately.
Voor eenige dagen.	The other day.
Bovenmate.	Beyond measure.
Binnen kort.	Ere long.
Ingesloten.	Inclosed.
Alles door elkander.	Helter-shelter.
Mis.	Far from it.
Het scheelde niet veel, of ik...	I had like to be...
Ergens.	Some-where.
Nergens.	No-where.
Ergens anders.	Else where, some-where else.
Kwalijk nemen.	To take amiss, to take ill.
Zie eens!	Behold.
Geen woord meer.	Not an other word.

## 10.

Hier ben ik, daar is hij.	Here I am, there he is.
---------------------------	-------------------------

Er wordt gescheld.	Somebody rings the bell.
Dat zeide hij mij.	That is what he told me.
Dit antwoordde ik hem.	That is what I answered him.
Wat scheelt u?	What ails you, what is the matter with you?
Hem scheelt iets.	There is something the matter with him.
Ik ben misselijk.	I am qualmish.
Er zijn drie menschen om u te spreken.	There are three men that want to speak you.
Zoowel groot als klein.	Both great and small.
Men kan hem niets begrijpelijk maken.	There is no explaining it to him.
Voor drie maanden.	Three months ago.
Het is niet om uit te houden.	It is not to be borne.

## 11.

Ik weet niet, wat ik doe.	I don't know what I am about.
Geef acht op uw werk!	Mind your work.
Geef acht op hetgeen gij doen wilt.	Mind what you are about.
Wat zegt gij?	What is it that you say?
Wat wilt gij?	What do you want?
Hij is een rijk man.	He is a warm man.
Hij heeft hem een bezoek gemaakt.	He has paid him a visit.
Hij komt reeds.	He is coming.
Wij zullen dadelijk eten.	We are going to dine.
Hij wilde juist uitgaan.	He was just going out.
Wat zal er van haar worden?	What will become of her?
Hoe gaat het u, hoe vaart gij?	How are you, how is it with you?
Dat spreekt van zelf.	That is understood; of course.
Het leven is daarbij in gevaar.	Life is at stake.

Mijne eer staat daarbij op 't spel.	My honour is at stake.
Te voet gaan.	To go on foot.
Rijden (te paard).	To go (ride) on horseback.
Rijden (in een wagen).	To go (ride) in a carriage.
Iemand te ontmoet gaan.	To go to meet a person.

## GESPREEKEN.

*Eten en drinken.*

## 1.

Gij schijnt honger te hebben.	You seem to be hungry.
Ik heb in het geheel geen honger, maar ik heb goeden eetlust.	I am not hungry at all, but I have a good appetite.
Ik ben zeer hongerig.	I am extremely hungry.
Ik ben zoo hongerig, dat ik wel een stuk droog brood zoude kunnen eten.	I am so hungry, that I could eat a piece of dry bread.
Waarom eet gij niet iets?	Why don't you eat something?
Hebt gij iets te eten?	Have you got any thing to eat?
Wel zeker heb ik dat.	To be sure I have.
Hier is brood, boter en kaas.	Here is bread, butter and cheese.
Dat is genoegzaam.	That will do.
Gij eet niet.	You do not eat.
Ik verzeker u, dat ik goed gegeten heb.	I have eat very well, I assure you.
Ik geloof dat gij met uw ontbijt niet tevreden zijt.	I believe you are not satisfied with your breakfast.
Ik eet altijd brood en kaas tot ontbijt.	I always breakfast on bread and cheese.
Eet gij nooit boter?	Do you never eat any butter?

Het ontbijt is mijn beste maaltijd.	Breakfast is my best meal.
Ik houd meer van het middageten.	I like my dinner better.
Neem nog een sneedje brood.	Take another slice of bread.
Ik dank u; ik zal niets meer gebruiken.	I thank you, I will not take any more.
Het spijt mij dat wij geen koud ossenvleesch hebben.	I am sorry we have no cold beef.
Hebt gij geen' dorst?	Are you not thirsty?
Ik ben zeer dorstig.	I am quite dry.
Uw vriend zegt dat hij buitengewoon dorstig is.	Your friend says, he is extremely thirsty.
Waarom drinkt hij dan niet?	Why he does not drink, then?
Drink een glas wijn.	Take a glass of wine.
Ik geloof dat het beter ware, als ik bier dronk.	I think I had better drink some beer.
Ik houd meer van wijn, vooral bij het ontbijt.	I like wine better, particularly at breakfast.
Ik drink den geheelen dag niets dan water.	I drink nothing but water, all day long.
Ik houd niets van water, het verkoelt de maag te veel.	I don't like water at all, it cools my stomach too much.
Water maakt het bloed frisch; te veel wijn daarentegen verdikt het.	Water refreshes the blood, whereas too much wine thickens it.
Neem nog een glas wijn.	Take another glass of wine.
Geef mij, als het u belieft, nog een glas wijn.	Give me another glass of wine, if you please.
Mijnheer, ik heb de eer op uwe gezondheid te drinken.	Sir, I have the honour to drink your health.

*Gaan en komen.*

Het verblijdt mij, u te ontmoeten.	I am glad to meet you.
Dat verheugt mij ook.	And so I am.
Waar gaat gij heen?	Where are you going?
Ik wilde naar mijne tante.	I was going to my aunt's.
Ik kom van huis en ga naar school.	I am coming from home, and am going to school.
Maar vanwaar komt gij?	But where are you coming from?
Ik kom van de kerk.	I am coming from church.
Wilt gij met mij mede gaan?	Will you come with me?
Ik dank u, ik moet naar de beurs.	I thank you, I must go to the exchange.
Laat ons wandelen.	Let us take a walk.
Zeer gaarne; maar waarheen zullen wij gaan?	With all my heart, but wither shall we go?
Welken weg wenscht gij dat wij inslaan?	Which way do you wish us to go?
Ik zou gaarne eene wandeling doen.	I should like to take a walk.
En waarom doet gij het niet?	And why can't you?
Ik heb te veel te schrijven.	I have too much to write.
Welnu, maak eerst uw schriftwerk af, en kom mij dan afhalen.	Well, then, finish your writing first, and then call on me.
Toegestemd. Maar willen wij uwen broeder niet onderweg afhalen?	Agreed. But will we not take your brother on our way?
Zoo als gij wilt.	Just as you please.
Ik vrees echter dat hij niet te huis is.	I am however afraid, he is not at home.

Is Mijnheer Wall te huis?	Is Mr. Wall at home.
Neen, mijnheer, hij is van morgen om acht uur uitgegaan.	No, sir, he went out at eight o'clock in the morning.
Ik wenschte gaarne te weten, waarheen hij gegaan is.	I wish to know whither he is gone.
Dat kan ik u inderdaad niet zeggen.	I really cannot tell you.
Is hij misschien naar zijnen zieken oom?	Is he perhaps gone to see his sick uncle?
Het is mogelijk, mijnheer, maar ik weet het niet zeker.	It may be, sir; but I am not sure of it.
Wanneer verwacht gij hem terug?	When do you expect him back?
Ik kan het u niet zeggen; hij zeide er niets van, toen hij heenging.	I can't tell; he said nothing when he set off.

## 3.

*De ouderdom.*

Hoe oud zijt gij?	How old are you?
Hoe oud is uw vader?	How old is your father?
Ik ben tien jaar.	I am ten years old.
Ik ben tien en een half jaar.	I am ten years and a half.
Mijne zuster is bijna achttien.	My sister is near eighteen.
Zij zal de volgende week achttien jaar worden.	She will be eighteen next week.
Zij ziet er zoo oud niet uit.	She does not look so old.
Ik dacht niet, dat zij zoo oud was.	I did not think she was so old.
Hoe oud denkt gij dat ik ben?	How old do you take me to be?
Ten hoogste dertig.	Not older than thirty, at most.

Gij bedriegt u, ik ben bijna veertig.	You are greatly mistaken, I am nearly forty.
Is uw vader niet reeds twee en zestig jaar?	Is not your father already sixty two years old?
Hij is pas vijf en vijftig, maar mijn grootvader is reeds drie en tachtig jaar.	He is but fifty five, but my grandfather is already eighty three years old.
Ik zoude hem niet voor zoo oud gehouden hebben.	I should not have thought him so old.
Neen, inderdaad, hij ziet er veel jonger uit.	No, indeed, he looks much younger.
Maar hoe oud is wel uw oom?	But your uncle, how old may he be?
Hij zal ongeveer twee en zestig jaar zijn.	He may be about sixty two.
Dus is hij ouder dan uw vader.	Then he is older than your father.
Ja, ongeveer zeven jaar.	Yes, about seven years.
Ik begin ook reeds oud te worden.	I am beginning to grow old too.
Gij zijt toch nog iets jonger dan ik.	Still you are somewhat younger than I am.
Ik dacht, dat wij in hetzelfde jaar geboren waren.	I thought we were born in the same year.

## 4.

*De tijd.*

Hoe laat is het toch?	What o'clock may it be?
Kunt gij mij zeggen hoe laat het is?	Can you tell me, what o'clock it is?
Zeg mij, als het u belieft, hoe laat het is.	Pray, tell me, how late it is.

Ik heb mijn horologie te huis gelaten.	I left my watch at home.
Het mijne is bij den horologiemaker.	Mine is at the watchmaker's.
Ik geloof dat het bij twee is.	I think it is about two o'clock.
Het kan onmogelijk zoo laat zijn.	It cannot possibly be so late.
Ik vrees dat het reeds later is.	I am afraid it is later.
Het is half vier.	It is half past three o'clock.
Het heeft drie geslagen.	It has struck three.
Het is kwartier over drie.	It is a quarter past three.
Het zal aanstonds half vier slaan.	It is going to strike half past three.
Heeft het nog geen vier geslagen?	Has it not yet struck four?
Het is kwartier voor zes.	It is three quarters past five. It wants a quarter to six.
Het is op slag van acht.	It is on the stroke of eight.
De klok zal dadelijk slaan.	The clock is going to strike.
Hoe kan het reeds zoo laat zijn?	How can it be so late already?
Hoor! het slaat twaalf uur.	Hark! it is striking twelve o'clock.

## 5.

*Het weder.*

Het is heerlijk weder.	It is delightful weather.
Het weder is zoo schoon, als het zijn kan.	The weather is as fine as can be.
Hoe is het weder van morgen?	How is the weather this morning?
Het is slecht weer.	It is bad weather.

Het is mooi weder voor het jaargetijde.	It is fine weather for the season.
De hemel is met wolken bedekt.	The sky is overcast.
Het is nevelig.	It is foggy.
Het dooit.	It is dewy.
Het is regenachtig weder.	It is rainy weather.
De hemel wordt zeer donker.	The sky becomes very dark.
Ik vind het zeer warm.	I find it very hot.
Ik vind het in het geheel niet koud.	I do not find it cold at all.
Het is een weinig koud.	It is rather cold.
Het zal regenen.	It will rain.
Ik geloof dat het regent.	I believe it is raining.
Het heeft den geheelen dag geregend.	It has been raining all the day.
Het zal dadelijk regenen.	It is going to rain.
Voelt gij niet eenige druppels?	Do you not feel some drops?
Hagelt het niet?	Does it not hail?
Ik geloof, dat het zal sneeuwen.	I believe it will snow.
Het sneeuwde gisteren.	It snowed yesterday.
Wij hebben veel sneeuw gehad.	We have had a great deal of snow.
Het sneeuwt groote vlokken.	It snows in great flakes.
Het vriest.	It freezes, it is freezing.
Het vroom gisteren.	It froze yesterday.
Het heeft de geheele week gevoren.	It has been freezing all the week.
Ik geloof, dat het dauwt.	I believe it thaws.
Ik geloof, dat wij weldra dooiweder krijgen.	I think we shall soon have thawing-weather.
Wij hebben een strengen winter.	We have a severe winter.

Ik vind het zeer winderig.	I find it very windy.
De wind is zeer sterk.	The wind is very high.
De wind is zeer hevig.	The wind is very strong.
Zie, het bliksemt.	Look, how it lightens.
Ziet gij den bliksem?	Do you see the lightning?
Het weerlicht.	It is sheet-lightning.
Het dondert.	It thunders.
Hoort gij den donder niet rollen?	Do you not hear the thunder roar?
De bliksem is ingeslagen.	The lightning has struck.
Het weder is dit jaar zeer ongestadig.	This year the weather is very unsettled.
Hoe donker is het!	How dark it is!
De maan zal weldra opkomen.	The moon is going to rise.

## 6.

*Begroeting.*

Goeden morgen, mijnheer.	Good morning (to you) sir!
Ik wensch u goeden morgen.	Sir, I wish you a good morning.
Goeden dag, mijnheer!	Good day, sir!
Goeden avond, mijnheer!	Good evening, sir!
Goeden nacht, mijnheer!	Good night, sir!
Ik wensch u een aangename nachtrust.	I wish you a good night's rest.
Vaarwel, mijnheer!	Adieu, good bye, sir!
Gij zijt wel, hoop ik.	I hope you are well.
Volkomen wel, ik dank u.	Perfectly well, I thank you.
Hoe vaart gij, mijnheer?	How do you do, sir?
Zeer wel, ik dank u. Hoe vaart gij?	Very well, I thank you, sir; and how are you?
Inderdaad, zeer wel.	Very well, indeed.

Hoe gaat het heden met uwe gezondheid?	How is your health to day?
Ik ben zoo wel als mogelijk.	I am as well as I can be.
Zijt gij nog altijd welvarende?	Do you continue in good health?
Tamelijk wel, hoe vaart gij?	Pretty good, and how is yours?
Hoe vaart heden uw vader?	How is your father to-day?
Ik hoop toch dat uwe moeder weer geheel beter is.	I hope your mother is entirely recovered.
Zij is nu zeer wel.	She is quite well now.
Ik ben uw dienaar, mijnheer!	Sir, I am your servant.
Ik ben uw onderdanigste dienaar.	I am your most humble servant.

## 7.

*Het bezoek.*

Ik geloof dat ik hoor kloppen.	I believe I hear knock.
Er klopt iemand.	Somebody knocks.
Klopt er niet iemand?	Does not somebody knock?
Wil ik eens gaan zien, wie er is?	Shall I go and see who it is?
Waarom doet gij niet open?	Why do you not open the door?
Binnen!	Come in!
Wie is het?	Who is it?
Het is mevrouw Thomson.	It is Mrs. Thomson.
Goeden morgen, mevrouw!	Good morning to you, madam.
Ik verheug mij altijd zeer, u te zien.	I am always very glad to see you.
Ik heb u sedert een jaar niet gezien.	I have not seen you this year.
Ga zitten, als het u belieft.	Take a seat if you please.

Zet u, als het u belieft.	Pray sit down.
Jan, zet een stoel voor mevrouw T.	John, draw a chair for Mrs. T.
Geef mevrouw T. eenen stoel.	Give a chair to Mrs. T.
Ik dank u, mijnheer, ik heb zeer weinig tijd.	I thank you, sir; I have very little time to spare.
Maar gij zult toch heden middag bij ons eten.	But you will stay and dine with us.
Neen, ik kan werkelijk zoo lang niet van huis.	No, indeed, I cannot stay so long from home.
Ik kan naauwelijks een kwartier blijven.	I can hardly stay a quarter of an hour.
Uwe bezoeken zijn altijd te kort.	Your visits are really too short.
Mijne kinderen kosten mij veel tijd.	My children take up much of my time.
Ik heb vele boodschappen te doen.	I have many messages to do.
Gij hebt altijd haast.	You are always in such a hurry.
Ik beloof een andermaal langer bij u te blijven.	I promise you to stay longer the next time I call on you.
Ik hoop dat gij ons weder spoedig met uw bezoek zult vereeren.	I hope you will soon honour us again with your visit.
Ik zal u zeker spoedig wederzien.	I shall certainly soon see you again.
Als de tijd het mij veroorlooft, zal ik aanstaanden vrijdag bij u aankomen.	If my time permits it, I will call again friday next.
Nu dan, tot vrijdag.	Well till friday then.

*Het ontbijt.*

Gij hebt zeker nog niet ontbeten?	I suppose you have not yet breakfasted.
Hebt gij reeds ontbeten?	Have you had your breakfast already.
Inderdaad, neen; het is mij ook onverschillig, of ik ontbijt.	Indeed, I have not; but I do not much care for my breakfast.
Gij komt juist bij tijds, om met ons te ontbijten.	You come just in time to breakfast with us.
Is het ontbijt gereed?	Is breakfast ready?
Alles staat op tafel.	Every thing is on the table.
Laat ons dan ontbijten.	Let us breakfast then.
Wat drinkt gij, thee of koffij?	What do you drink, tea or coffee?
Ik kan het beste thee verdragen.	Tea agrees best with me.
Houdt gij veel van chocolade?	Are you fond of chocolate?
Ik verkies thee boven alles.	I like tea to every thing else.
Wat mag ik u aanbieden?	What shall I offer you?
Het is mij alles hetzelfde; ik heb zulk eenen honger, dat ik alles zou kunnen eten.	It is all the same to me; I am so hungry that I could eat any thing.
Wat eet gij het liefst, kadetjes of geroosterd brood?	Which do you like best, rolls or toast?
Ik verkies kadetjes.	I prefer rolls.
Is de koffij naar uwen smaak?	Is the coffee to your taste?
Is zij sterk genoeg?	Is it strong enough?
Ik vind ze iets slap.	I find it rather weak.
Uwe koffij is voortreffelijk.	I find your coffee excellent.
Wilt gij nog niet een weinig suiker nemen?	Won't you take a little more sugar?

Gij ziet, ik doe alsof ik te huis was. You see, I do as if I were at home.  
Ik ben van uwe gastvrijheid overtuigd. I am convinced of your hospitality.

9.

*Voor het middagmaal.*

Ik wenschte wel eens te weten, hoe laat wij heden eten. I want to know at what o'clock we dine to-day.  
Op den gewonen tijd. At the usual hour.  
Ik wilde gaarne eten voor ik naar de beurs ga. I want to dine before I go to the exchange.  
Wij zullen om twee uren eten. We are to dine at two o'clock.  
Is dat niet te vroeg? Is not that too early?  
O neen, de beurs begint om drie uur. Oh no. The exchange begins at two o'clock.  
Het middagmaal zal wel niet voor half drie gereed zijn. I suppose dinner will not be ready before half past two.  
Dan hebt gij eene luije keukenmeid. Then you have a lazy cook.  
Zullen wij alleen eten? Shall we dine by ourselves?  
Neen, ik heb eenige vrienden verzocht. No; I have invited a few friends.  
Ik eet het liefst in gezelschap. I like best to dine in company.  
Mijnheer en mevrouw L. hebben beloofd ons met hun bezoek te vereeren, indien het weder hen niet terughoudt. Mr. and Mrs. L. have promised to honour us with their company, if they are not prevented by the weather.  
Wij hebben slechts een eenvoudig middagmaal. We have but a very homely dinner.

Ik heb om visch gestuurd. I have sent for some fish.  
Er was geen visch te krijgen. There was no fish to be got.  
In elk geval zullen wij toch vleesch en groenten hebben, en dat is genoeg. At any rate we shall have meat and vegetables, and that will do.

10.

*Het middagmaal.*

Het eten staat op tafel. Dinner is on the table.  
Wilt gij plaats nemen? Will you take your place?  
Zonder complimenten; daar is uwe plaats; ga zitten. Without ceremony, there is your place; sit there.  
Eet gij gaarne soep? Do you like soup?  
Hoe vindt gij ze? How do you find it?  
Zij is heerlijk. It is delicious.  
Indien ze niet zout genoeg is naar uwen smaak, het zoutvatje staat naast u; of indien gij peper wilt, hier is de peperbus. If it is not salted to your taste, the salt-cellar is near you; or if you like pepper, here is the pepper-box.  
Gij zult toch, zonder twijfel, wel een glas wijn na de soep drinken? No doubt you will take a glass of wine after the soup?  
Dat kan ik onmogelijk weigeren. I cannot possibly refuse that.  
Dit gekookte rundvleesch ziet er zeer lekker uit. This boiled beef looks remarkably fine.  
Mag ik u een stukje aanbieden? Shall I offer you a slice?  
Zeer gaarne. Very willingly.  
Niet zooveel vet, als het u belieft. Not so much fat, if you please.  
Een weinig mager? Some of the lean?

II.

8



Dat stuk is te groot.	That piece is too large.
De helft zal genoeg zijn.	Half will be sufficient.
Wees zoo goed mij de mosterd te geven.	I should thank you for some mustard.
Wij zullen nog meer krijgen.	We shall have something more.
Nog gebraden vleesch met salade.	Some roast meat with a salad.
Het is onze gewone kost, wanneer wij alleen zijn.	It is our ordinary fare, when we have none but our family.
Het is een zeer gezonde kost.	It is a very wholesome diet.
Gij zijt dicht bij de schel; wees zoo goed te schellen.	You are near the bell; have the kindness to pull it.
De keukenmeid moet boven komen.	Let the cook come up stairs.
Veroorloof mij de salade te bereiden.	Permit me to mix the salad.
Laat mij dat voor u doen.	Let me take that trouble off your hand.
Mag ik u een boutje van dit gevogelte aanbieden?	Shall I offer you a leg of this fowl?
Hier is de saladeschotel.	Here is the salad-dish.
Neem zoo veel salade, als gij beliest.	Help yourself to what salad you please.
Hier is het olie- en azijnstelletje, indien er niet genoeg olie en azijn op is.	Here are the casters, if there is not oil or vinegar enough.

## 11.

*Van het schrijven.*

Wilt gij zoo goed zijn mij eene pen te vermaken?	Will you be so kind as to make me a pen?
--	--

Ik heb van morgen reeds verscheidene voor u vermaakt.	I made you several this morning.
Maar zij deugen allen niets.	But they are all good for nothing.
Hoeveel hebt gij geschreven?	How much have you written?
Ik heb reeds drie bladzijden geschreven.	I have already written three pages.
Zeer goed; het verheugt mij te zien dat gij vlijtig zijt.	Very well; I am glad to see that you are diligent.
Ik moet verscheidene opstellen schrijven.	I have several exercises to write.
Schrijf ze goed en zonder fouten.	Write them well and without faults.
Ik zal zorgen geene fouten te maken.	I shall take care not to make faults.
De inkt is te dik.	The ink is too thick.
Giet den inkt weg, die in uwen inktkoker is.	Throw the ink away which is in your inkstand.
Dan is echter de inktkoker ledig en ik heb geen inkt meer.	But then my inkstand will be empty, and I shall have no ink at all.
Hier is andere, die, geloof ik, beter is.	Here is some other, which, I think, is better.
Veroorloof mij dien te proberen.	Allow me to try it.
Deze is zeer goed.	This is very good.
Als ik meer noodig heb, zal er u om verzoeken.	When I want some more, I will ask for some.
Gij zult mij altijd bereid vinden u alles te geven, wat gij bij uw werk noodig hebt.	You will always find me ready to give you whatever you want for your work.
Ik had bij mijnen inkt een weinig water gegoten.	I had put a few drops of water into my ink.

Eenige druppels bier zouden beter geweest zijn.	A few drops of beer would have been better.
Zou azijn niet even zoo goed geweest zijn?	Would not vinegar have been just as good?
Niet als gij met stalen pen- nen schrijft.	Not if you write with steel pens.
Ik heb geen papier genoeg.	I have not paper enough.
Ik zal u iets geven.	I will give you some.
Hoeveel vellen hebt gij noodig?	How many sheets do you want?
Maar drie.	Only three sheets.
Dit schijnt goed papier te zijn.	This seems to be good paper.
Het is zeer glad.	It is very smooth.
Dit is maar zeer gewoon papier.	This is but very common paper.
Het is goed genoeg voor het doel, waartoe ik het gebruik.	It is good enough for the purpose I want it for.

## 12.

*De wandeling.*

Welk een mooie dag is het!	What a beautiful day it is!
Inderdaad, zeer schoon.	Most delightful, indeed.
Het zou jammer zijn te huis te blijven.	It would be wrong to stay at home.
Dat is waar; maar wij kunnen ook wandelen.	True; but we may take a walk.
Ik ben er mede tevreden, laat mij echter mijn wandelstok krijgen.	I am satisfied with it; but first let me take my walking stick.
Kom, nu ben ik gereed; wij zullen ons op weg begeven.	Come, now I am ready; let us set off.

Waarheen zullen wij gaan?	Which way shall we go?
Zal de weg niet te stoffig zijn?	Will not the road be too dusty?
O neen; het heeft geregend.	Oh no; it has rained.
Indien wij door dit veld gaan, zullen wij niet voor de zon beschut zijn.	If we cross this field, we shall not be sheltered from the sun.
Laat ons dit voetpad inslaan.	Let us take this foot-path.
Het is zeer lommerijk.	It is very shadowy.
Het is zeer aangenaam in de schaduw te wandelen, wanneer het warm is en de zon schijnt.	It is very pleasant to walk in the shade, when it is hot, and when the sun shines.
Is dit niet de naaste weg naar huis?	Is not this the nearest way home?
Ik geloof, hij is verder dan de andere.	I believe it is farther than the other.
Dan zullen wij te laat komen.	Then we shall be too late.
Het is maar een uur gaans.	It is only an hour's walk.
Dan zullen wij juist bij tijds komen.	Then we shall just be in time.
Des te beter, want mijn neef Eduard zal op mij wachten.	So much the better; for my cousin Ned will be waiting for me.

## WOORDENLIJST

DER

E E R S T E A F D E E L I N G . Blz. 1—58.

1. *Coachman*, koetsier. *stable*, stal. *cellar*, kelder. *postoffice*, postkantoor. *since*, sedert. *to remain*, blijven. *a fortnight*, veertien dagen. *napkin*, servet. *drawer*, lade. *ale-house*, herberg. *exchange*, beurs. *town-hall*, stadhuis. *I beg your pardon*, ik vraag u vergiffenis.

2. *Keuken*, *kitchen*. *voordat*, *before*. *woud*, *forest*. *Burgemeester*, *Mayor*.

3. *Roast beef*, gebraden vleesch. *infinitely*, zeer. *to lie down to sleep*, gaan slapen. *to want*, noodig hebben, hier: willen. *soundly*, vast. *to close*, sluiten. *to be mistaken*, zich bedriegen. *to get up*, opstaan. *window*, venster. *to be in the wrong*, ongelijk hebben.

4. Een boterham, *a piece of bread and butter*. liever, *better*. *timmerman*, *carpenter*. *hout*, *wood*. *vertelde*, *told*.

5. *Pain*, pijn. *breast*, borst. *lazy*, lui, traag. *you have always something the matter with you*, scheelt u altijd wat. *habit*, gewoonte. *I am going*, ik zal dadelijk. *hard-hearted*, onmeedogenend. *to endeavour*, trachten. *to mend*, verbeteren. *manners*, zeden. *to follow*, volgen. *advice*, raad.

6. *Wandeling*, *walk*. *doen*, *to take*. *zon*, *sun*. *schijnen*, *to shine*. *schielijk*, *quick*. *verder*, *farther*. *komen*, *to get*.

7. *Spacious*, ruim. *china*, porcelijn. *populous*, bevolkt. *to seem*, schijnen. *flirty*, vlugtig. *punishment*, straf. *example*, voorbeeld. *prejudicial*, schadelijk. *health*, gezondheid. *soul*, ziel. *contagious*, besmettend. *air*, lucht. *body*, ligchaam. *quiet*, rustig, *proud*, trotsch. *fiery*, vurig.

8. *Discreet*, verstandig. *physician*, geneesheer. *clever*, bekwaam. *deal*, menigte. *war*, oorlog. *florin*, gulden. *troops*, troepen. *mile*, mijl.

175

9. *Landkaart*, *map*. *belooning*, *reward*. *verdienen*, *to deserve*. *daarover*, *of it*. *verblijd*, *glad*. *kleed*, *gown*. *geduld*, *patience*.

10. *Soft*, slap. *to split*, splijten. *weak*, zwak. *to distinguish*, onderscheiden. *pair of spectacles*, bril. *careless*, zorgeloos. *cheap*, goedkoop. *desk*, lessenaar. *german*, duitsch. *to beg*, vragen, verzoeken. *saving*, spaarzaam.

11. *Lam*, *lamb*. *wat u deert*, *what is the matter with you*. *lagchen*, *to laugh*. *weenen*, *to cry*. *aanmoedigen*, *to encourage*. *vrolijk*, *merry*. *treurig*, *sad*. *kwartier*, *quarter of an hour*. *gadeslaan*, *to observe*. *aanzien*, *to look at*. *gehoorzaam*, *obedient*. *ongehoorzaam*, *disobedient*. *grof*, *coarse*. *noodig hebben*, *to want*. *leelijk*, *ugly*. *prent*, *image*.

12. *Teacher*, onderwijzer. *officer*, officier. *milliner*, modemaakster. *to ask for*, vragen naar. *walking-stick*, wandelstok. *to prescribe*, voorschrijven. *to offend*, beledigen.

13. *Gaan*, *to go*. *advokaat*, *advocate*, *lawyer*. *kleermaker*, *tailor*. *plukken*, *to pluck*. *zaagt*, *saw*. *ontbreken*, *to want*. *potlood*, *lead-pencil*.

14. *Intention*, voornemen, *plan*. *to travel*, reizen. *engraving*, plaat.

15. *Teekenen*, *to draw*. *teekening*, *drawing*. *teekenmeester*, *drawing-master*. *geldstuk*, *piece of money*. *vernemen*, *to hear*. *stad*, *town*. *komen*, *to pass*. *gevecht*, *battle*. *gewond*, *wounded*. *groeten*, *to salute*. *beschuldigen*, *to accuse*.

16. *Ease*, gemak. *to converse*, zich onderhouden, spreken. *probity*, regtschapenheid. *to be about*, plan hebben. *bridge*, brug. *to enter*, binnentreden. *to complain*, klagen. *of*, *over*. *frequently*, dikwijls. *leaf*, blad. *torn*, gescheurd.

17. *Redden*, *to save*. *in de verte*, *yonder*, *from afar*. *bewonen*, *to inhabit*. *beurs*, *purse*. *toevertrouwen*, *to confide*. *weg*, *off*. *dapperheid*, *valour*. *zoo zeer*, *highly*. *roemen*, *to commend*. *schoonzoon*, *son-in-law*. *wijnverkooper*, *wine-merchant*. *lint*, *ribbon*. *bevallen*, *to please*. *doorbrennen*, *to pass*. *boom*, *tree*. *afvallen*, *to fall off*. *familie*, *family*. *verplicht zijn*, *to have obligation*. *dingen*, *things*. *waarde*, *value*. *punt*, *point*. *afbreken*, *to break off*.

18. *To happen*, gebeuren. *left*, verlaten. *return*, terugkomst. *truth*, waarheid. *to educate*, opvoeden.

19. *Willen*, *to please*, *to like*. *verlaten*, *to leave*. *zorgen*, *to take care of*. *honen*, *to insult*. *verborgen*, *hid*. *voor*, *from*.

20. *To call for*, komen om af te halen. *use*, gebruik. *to interest*,

betreffen. *situation*, stand. *citizen*, burger. *to serve*, dienen. *duty*, pligt.

21. *Virtue*, deugd. *whether*, of. *reproach*, verwijt. *impression*, indruk. *reasonable*, redelijk, billijk.

22. Geruisch, *noise*. verschrikken, *to frighten*. leeftijd, *age*. staan blijven, *to stop*. fout, *fault*. zijde, *side*. besteden, *to employ*. kwaad, *ill*.

23. *To lay*, leggen. *subject*, onderworpen, onderhevig. *error*, dwaling. *on*, bij. *to vex*, kwellen, ergeren. *to sow*, zaaijen. *to reap*, maaijen, oogsten.

24. Meubelen, *furniture*. weldoener, *benefactor*. ongelukkigen, *unfortunate*. mededeelen, *to communicate*. bloedverwanten, *relations*. zich wenden, *to address one's self*. boodschap, *commission*, *errand*.

25. *To inform*, berigten. *condition*, voorwaarde. *entrance*, intrede, ingang. *to refuse*, weigeren. *I mistook*, ik hield, ik zag aan.

26. *Beneficent*, weldadig. *opinion*, gevoel, meening. *to obtain*, verkrijgen. *to listen*, toeluisteren. *to impose upon*, foppen, diets maken. *to succeed*, slagen. *to set about*, beginnen.

27. Onverdiend, *undeserved*. afscheid, *leave*. zeer, *dearly*. geboren, *born*. doorbrengen, *to pass*. werkzaam, *industrious*. verdedigen, *to defend*. aangrijpen, *to attack*. geleerd, *learned*. hooren, *to listen to*.

28. *An hour ago*, een uur geleden. *what is the use of washing one's self*, waartoe dient het, dat men zich wast.

29. Gezelschap, *company*. een voorslag doen, *to propose*. namiddig, *afternoon*. gezond, *healthy*. eigen roem, *self-praise*. hatelijk, *odious*. blootstellen, *to expose*. gevaar, *danger*. troosten, *to console*. verbergen, *to conceal*.

30. *It is going*, het zal dadelijk. *high*, sterk, hard. *north*, noord.

31. *To be seated*, zitten. *commonly*, gewoonlijk. *stove*, kagchel. *willingly*, gaarne. *They want me to be*, zij willen dat ik ben. *chat-terbox*, babbelaar. *fool*, dwaas.

32. Steen, *stone*. bank, *bench*. schaduw, *shade*. mishagen, *to displease*. met elkander, *together*.

33. *Back*, terug. *thief*, dief.

34. Ongeveer, *about*. Engelschen, *English*, *Englishman*. Frankrijk, *France*. jammer, *a pity*. zekerlijk, *certainly*. zomer, *summer*.

35. *To sustain*, lijden, doorstaan. *heavy*, groote. *loss*, verlies. *boldness*, stoutheid, koenheid. *to deny*, loochenen. *to request*, verzoeken. *to flatter*, vleijen. *to depend on*, afhangen. *a few*, eenige. *greatly*, zeer. *I am sorry*, het spijt mij. *to stay*, blijven.

36. *To relieve*, helpen, ondersteunen. *to consent*, bewilligen. *to*

*defray*, dragen, bestrijden. *charges*, kosten. *to accustom*, gewennen. *distinctly*, duidelijk. *to practise*, zich oefenen. *whose turn*, wiens beurt. *I am to*, ik moet. *I am fond of reading*, ik lees gaarne. *instructive*, leerzame.

37. Weder vinden, *to find again*. nalatigheid, *negligence*. smart, grief, *affliction*. ondervinden, *to experience*.

38. *To prevent*, verhinderen. *to behave*, gedragen. *to confess*, bekennen. *penny*, stuiver, duit. *to depend*, zich verlaten. *to pretend*, staande houden, beweren. *a piece of news*, nieuws. *parents*, ouders. *again*, weder. *to settle*, in orde brengen. *concerns*, aangelegenheden.

39. *Able*, in staat. *fled*, vlood, vlugtte. *precipitation*, haast. *rapid*, rasch. *to surrender*, zich overgeven. *to kill*, doden. *spot*, plaats. *to whisper*, fluisteren. *to regret*, betreuren.

40. *To gather*, plukken. *strawberries*, aardbeziën. *delicious*, heerlijk. *landlady*, waardin. *to dictate*, dictéren. *to seal*, verzegelen. *garter*, kousenband. *to be rejoiced*, verheugd zijn. *to determine on*, besluiten. *innumerable*, ontelbaar.

41. Ontmoetten, *met with*. maaijen, *to mow*. dragen, *to carry*, *to bear*. eerlang, *erealong*, *in a short time*. onbeleefd, *impolite*. noodigen, *to invite*.

42. *To sneak*, sluipen. *trick*, kunststuk. *to drown*, verdrinken. *to afflict*, bedroeven. *to cover*, bedekken. *dish*, schotel. *to desert*, verlaten. *to desire*, wenschen. *instruction*, onderwijs. *to despair*, wanhopen. *hid*, verbergde (van: *to hide*, verbergen). *tear*, traan. *picture*, schilderij. *to faint*, in zwijm vallen. *to saddle*, zadelen. *to smile*, glimlagchen. *face*, aangezicht.

43. *Fair*, schoon. *copy*, afschrift. *boarding-school*, kostschool. *to confirm*, bevestigen. *circumstance*, omstandigheid. *to require*, verlangen. *to presume*, vermoeden. *to remember*, zich herinneren. *to suffer*, lijden, toestaan.

44. *To repent of*, berouw hebben. *obstinacy*, hoofdigheid. *country-seat*, buitenplaats. *bled*, ader gelaten.

45. *Together*, achter elkander. *to cypher*, rekenen. *key*, sleutel. *to doubt*, betwijfelen. *to provoke*, uitdagen, sarren, tergen. *durst*, durfde. *forward*, te voorschijn. *fierce*, grimmig.

46. *Naughty*, ondeugend. *hurry*, haast. *forenoon*, voormiddag.

47. IJs, *ice*. zakdoek, *hand-kerchief*.

48. *To select*, uitzoeken. *orchestra*, orkest. *to fish*, visschen. *draughts*, damspel. *to break forth*, uitbarsten. *to smoke*, rooken.

49. *To depart*, vertrekken. *hint*, wenk.

50. *Recommandation*, aanbeveling. *everywhere*, overal. *nowhere*, nergens. *message*, boodschap. *to let*, verhuren. *rent*, huur. *to expect*, verwachten.

51. Knaap, *boy*. Bankier, *Banker*. medegaan, *to go with*. waarlijk, *indeed*. matroos, *sailor*. zaak, *matter*.

52. *To embellish*, verfraaijen. *wide*, wijd, groot. *flat*, plat. *to put out*, uitsteken. *pointed*, spits. *cotton*, katoen. *to wipe*, afvegen.

53. *Sling*, band. *to make*, laten. *to snap*, kraken. *punch*, slag, stoot. *burden*, last. *to circulate*, omloopen. *to affect*, aandoen. *short-sighted*, kortzigtig.

54. Zwart, *black*. vuil, *dirty*. morsig, *nasty*. sterven, *to die*. vloeijen, *to flow*, *to run*. aap, *monkey*. manen, *mane*.

55. *To button*, toeknoopen. *felt*, vilt. *narrow*, eng. *hole*, gat. *to fit*, passen. *to pull off*, uittrekken. *to fetch*, halen. *knot*, strik, knoop. *to wear out*, verslijten.

56. *Just*, net, juist. *about*, bij.

57. Mantel, *cloak*. koetsier, *coach-man*. goudsmid, *goldsmith*. knop, *head*, *pommel*. onlangs, *formerly*, *lately*. handschoenen, *gloves*.

58. *Ready*, gereed. *nutritive*, voedzaam. *couple*, paar. *magnificent*, prachtig.

59. *To lay the cloth*, de tafel dekken. *to rinse*, spoelen. *to serve up*, opdisschen. *juicy*, sappig. *I would thank your for*, Ik zoude gaarne hebben. *slice*, snede. *to be fond of*, veel houden van. *to carve*, snijden, voorsnijden.

60. Verkouden zijn, *having caught a cold*. sterk, *strong*. grond, *ground*. onthalen, *to regale*, *to feast*.

61. *To furnish*, meubileren. *painted*, geschilderd. *parlour*, huiskamer. *to consist*, bestaan. *top*, blad. *marble*, marmer. *size*, grootte. *frame*, lijst. *to provide*, voorzien. *to call on*, aankomen. *list*, lijst.

61.\* Grootmoeder, *grandmother*. toebehooren, *to belong*. kleet, *gown*. goedkoop, *a cheap price*. krijt, *chalk*.

62. *Youth*, jongeling. *consequently*, bij gevolg. *to marry*, trouwen. *related*, vermaagschapt. *four years ago*, vier jaar geleden.

63. *To brew*, brouwen. *kettle*, ketel. *utensils*, gereedschap. *candle*, kaars. *scissors*, schaar. *razor*, scheermes. *stairs*, trap. *thread*, garen. *needle*, naald. *pin*, speld. *tape*, smal band, lint. *to grind*, malen. *corn*, koren. *fur*, bont, pelswerk. *to repair*, herstellen. *cask*, vat.

64. Weduwe, *widow*. verleden, *past*, *last*.

65. *Lodger*, huurder, bewoner. *to inhabit*, bewoner. *lower-part*,

onderhuis. *square*, vierkant. *neat*, rein, netjes. *free-stone*, hardsteen, arduinsteen. *slate*, lei. *principal stair-case*, hoofdtrap. *commodious*, gemakkelijk. *folding-door*, dubbele deur, (*porte-brisée*). *to smoke*, rooken. *deep*, diep.

66. *Jew*, jood. *pleasant*, aangenaam.

67. *To last*, duren. *to consecrate*, wijden. *to celebrate*, vieren. *remembrance*, gedachtenis. *passion*, lijden. *Lord*, Heer. *festival*, feest. *in commemoration*, ter herinnering. *Holy Ghost*, heilige Geest. *to descend*, afdalen.

68. Regterhand, *left hand*. schoonmaken, *to clean*. klimmen, *to climb*. werpen, *to fling*. herstelling, *restoration*, *repair*. verjaardag, *birthday*. overmorgen, *the day after to morrow*.

69. *Odoriferous*, welriekend. *medecine*, geneeskunde. *to cultivate*, kweken. *sweet*, zoet, liefelijk. *odour*, geur. *symbol*, zinnebeeld. *purity*, reinheid. *solitary*, eenzaam. *shadowy*, lommerrijke. *striped*, gestreept. *libial plants*, lippenvormige planten. *to bloom*, bloeijen.

70. Veroorloven, *to permit*. ruiker, *nose-gay*. bijvoegen, *to add*.

71. *Plough*, ploeg. *kennel*, hol. *male*, mannetje. *to construct*, bouwen. *rock*, rots. *intelligent*, verstandig, vernuftig. *domestic animal*, huisdier. *to tame*, tam maken, temmen. *trunk*, snuit. *ramified*, getakte. *wood*, hout.

72. *Bird of passage*, trekvogel. *prey*, roof. *warbling*, gekweel. *screech*, gekrijsch. *piercing*, scherp. *to announce*, aankondigen. *variegated*, bont, veelkleurig. *wall*, muur. *are long-lived*, leven lang. *to imitate*, nabootsen. *to gather*, vergaderen. *wing*, vleugel. *by couples*, paarsgewijze. *female*, wijfje.

73. Vastbinden, *to fasten*. anders, *less*. herder, *shepherd*. fabel, *fable*, *story*. lindenboom, *lime-tree*. in gezelschap, *accompanied by*. schadelijk, *hurtful*. vlieg, *fly*. mug, *gnat*. vooral, *especially*. noemen, *to call*. slechts, *but*. prijs, *price*.

74. *Fit*, aanval. *epidemical*, heerschend. *unripe*, onrijp. *to cause*, veroorzaken. *fore-runner*, voorbode.

75. *To calculate*, berekenen. *motion*, beweging. *to attribute*, toeschrijven. *influence*, invloed. *human*, menschelijk. *destiny*, lot. *satellite*, wachter, trawant. *populace*, volk. *foreboding*, voorteeken. *disastrous*, ongelukkig. *event*, gebeurtenis. *vegetables*, planten. *man-kind*, menschelijk geslacht. *to perish*, omkomen. *periodical*, tijdelijk, geregeld wederkomend. *to fertilize*, vruchtbaar maken. *principal wind*, voornaamste (hoofd) wind.

76. Veertien dagen, *a fort-night*. naar buiten, *on the country*.

worden, *be.* regenachtig, *rainy.* tellen, *to count.* aangezigt, *face.*

77. *Damage,* schade, nadeel. *devastation,* verwoesting. *to roar,* rommelen. *to strike,* inslaan. *elevated,* hoog, verheven. *spot,* plaats. *harbour,* haven. *degree,* graad. *at full,* vol. *quarter,* streek, gedeelte. *swampy,* moerassig. *luminous,* lichtend. *phenomenon,* natuurverschijnsel. *multitude,* menigte.

78. *Capital,* hoofdstad. *situated,* gelegen. *middle,* midden. *island,* eiland. *to divide,* verdeelen. *kingdom,* koninkrijk. *forest,* woud. *pasture-ground,* weiland. *cathedral,* hoofdkerk, domkerk. *empire,* rijk. *to intersect,* doorsnijden. *numerous,* talrijk. *chain,* ketting. *lofty,* hoog. *steep,* steil. *mine,* mijn. *lead,* lood. *to discover,* ontdekken. *climate,* klimaat, luchtstreek. *inconstant,* onbestendig. *to owe,* verschuldigd zijn. *fertility,* vruchtbaarheid. *Nile,* Nijl.

79. *Extent,* uitgestrektheid. *to surround,* omgeven. *to communicate,* in verbinding staan. *straits,* straat. *visible,* zichtbaar. *connexion,* verbinding. *to flow,* stroomen, vloeijen. *length,* lengte. *source,* bron. *to abound,* overvloed hebben.

80. Werelddeel, *part of the globe.* vorstendom, *principality.* hertogdom, *dutchy.* vloed, *flood.* schip, *vessel.* tooneel, *scene.*

---

T W E E D E A F D E E L I N G .

---

1. *James,* Jakob. *to consent,* toestemmen. *carriage,* wagen, rijtuig. *unless,* tenzij.

2. *Nine pins,* kegelspel. *skittle,* kegel.

3. *Lewis,* Lodewijk. *spaniel,* poedel. *lapdog,* schoothondje. *sprightly,* vrolijk. *to jump,* springen. *to caper,* huppelen. *kitten,* katje. *to fetch and carry,* apportéren. *paw,* poot.

4. *Bitch,* teef. *puppy,* jong hondje. *to get shorn,* laten scheren.

5. *Slit,* spleet. *to nib,* afpunten. *to sharpen,* slijpen.

6. *To fold,* vouwen. *to rule,* liniëren. *ruler,* liniaal. *sheet,* vel. *blottingpaper,* vloeipapier. *blot,* vlek. *does not carry the ink,* vloeit. *quire,* boek.

7. *Choice,* keus, voorraad. *to bargain,* dingen, handelen. *to keep,* ophouden.

8. *Complete assortment,* volledig sortiment. *to jest,* schertsen. *broad,* breed. *to be deceived,* zich bedriegen, vergissen. *yard,* el.

9. *To trust,* vertrouwen. *to be overcast,* betrekken. *soil,* grond. *to change,* veranderen. *dust,* stof. *shower,* bui. *to burst,* bersten. *ravage,* verwoesting.

10. *To take a ride,* uitrijden gaan. *grapes,* druiven.

11. *To doubt,* twijfelen.

12. *What do you want with me,* wat moet ik. *to keep waiting,* laten wachten. *to step,* stappen. *tempest,* onweder. *front-seat,* voorste bank. *coach-man,* koetsier.

13. *Please to God,* God geve het. *despair,* wanhoop. *good bye,* leef wel. *journey,* reis.

14. *Apoplectic stroke,* beroerte. *speechless,* sprakeloos. *salary,* inkomen, salaris. *trade,* handwerk, ambacht. *capacity,* bekwaamheid. *disposition,* aanleg.

15. *Fun,* grap, tijdverdrijf. *really,* waarlijk. *to make up,* uitmaken. *game,* spel. *to increase,* vermeederen. *smart,* vrolijk. *objection,* tegenzin. *that does not mind swearing,* die gaarne vloekt. *to hurt,* benadeelen. *evil,* kwade. *communication,* omgang, gezelschap. *to corrupt,* bederven. *to recollect,* zich herinneren. *ashamed of,* beschaamd over.

16. *Bezoeken,* *to pay a visit to.* vakantie, *holidays.* werk, *work.* onder voorwaarde, *on condition.* echter, *however.* zich gedragen, *to behave.* heb daar geen zorg voor, *make yourself easy.*

17. *Groeten,* *to salute.* wild, *wild.* onbezonnen, *inconsiderate.* verkwisten, *to waste.*

18. *Hé, hey.* uitzien, *to look.* reiziger, *traveller.* ontzeggen, *to refuse.*

19. *Poort,* *gate.* molen, *mill.* brug, *bridge.*

20. *Bloeyen,* *to bloom.* eikenboom, *oak-tree.* suikerfabriek, *sugar-work.* vlijt, *application.* spaarzaamheid, *savingness,* *economy.* rijk worden, *to grow rich.* vooruitkomen, *to advance.*

21. *Toren,* *steeple.* straks, *presently,* *immediately.* gebouw, *building.* duidelijk, *plainly.* vijver, *pond.* schuitje, *skiff,* *boat.* roeijen, *to row.*

22. *Vorigen,* *former.* medebrengen, *to bring along with one.*

23. *Lessenaar,* *desk.* afwijzen, *to refuse.*

24. *Boekenkast,* *library,* *bookcase.* hoek, *corner.* gedicht, *poem.* reisbeschrijving, *travel,* *account of travels,* *itinerary.*

25. *Lust hebben,* *to have a mind.* uitnoodiging, *invitation.* welkom, *welcome.*

26. Prettig, *pleasant*. landlieden, *country-people*. verstrooijing, *distraction*. stilte, *tranquillity*. gewoon zijn, *to be used, to be accustomed*. plukken, *to gather*. pret, *joy, delight*.

---

B R I E V E N .

---

1. *To profit*, ten nutte maken. *sincerely*, opregt. *to entrust*, toe vertrouwen. *care*, zorg. *to improve*, vorderingen maken, vooruitgaan, verbeteren. *mildness*, zachtmoedigheid. *wellfare*, welzijn. *by word of mouth*, mondeling. *dutiful*, gehoorzaam.

2. *Dictated*, ingegeven. *inexpressible*, onuitsprekelijk. *to devote*, wijden, toelleggen. *to give credit*, eer aandoen. *unexpected*, onverwacht. *affectionate*, liefhebbende.

3. *At length*, eindelijk. *lest*, uit vrees. *to afflict*, bedroeven. *gentle*, lief, zacht. *sight*, gezicht. *to embrace*, omarmen.

4. *To afford*, verschaffen, geven. *proof*, bewijs. *cowardly*, laf. *to give ones self up*, zich overgeven. *grief*, kommer, smart. *weakness*, zwakheid. *meanwhile*, ondertusschen. *account*, berigt. *occupation*, bezigheid.

5. *To tax*, beschuldigen. *uneasiness*, ongerustheid. *to be taken care of*, verpleegd worden. *to persist*, versterken. *to disturb*, verstoren. *to enjoy*, zich verheugen. *to bless*, zegenen. *tenderness*, teederheid.

6. *Silence*, stilzwijgen. *to alarm*, verontrusten. *to befall*, treffen. *to bestow*, besteden. *rather*, liever. *indifference*, onverschilligheid. *to be aware*, weten, kennen. *solicitude*, zorg. *suspense*, onzekerheid.

7. *To be anxious*, zeer wenschen. *result*, uitslag. *ease*, rust. *to grant*, verhooren. *to restore to health*, weder herstellen. *to diffuse*, verbreiden. *consolatory*, vertroostend.

8. *To consider*, beschouwen. *fervent*, vurig. *fulfilment*, vervulling. *to render*, maken. *peaceful*, vreedzaam. *to entreat*, bidden. *submission*, onderwerping.

9. Behoeven, *to need*. zetten, *to put*. klappen, *to clap*. verwelken, *to fade*.

10. Zaad, *seeds*. binnen kort, *in a short time, very soon*.

11. Feliciteren met, *to wish one joy of*. beleven, *to live to see*. bijgevoegden, *inclosed*.

12. Voegen, *to join*. bede, *request*. opvrolijken, *to divert*. geschiedenis, *story*.

13. Hiernevens, *herewith*. onlangs, *lately*.

14. Wanen, *to imagine*. vreemd, *foreign*.

15. Rijden, *to ride*. verontschuldigen, *to excuse*. boos, *angry*.

16. Doordringen, *to affect*. van, *with*. moederlijk, *maternal*. bewijzen, *to show*. dankbaar, *grateful*.

17. Van plan zijn, *to intend*. inhalen, *to repair*. verzuimen, *to neglect*.

18. Reeds lang geleden, *long since*. herinneren aan, *to put in mind of*. niets tegen hebben, *to have no objection to it*. toestemming, *consent*.

---

D E R D E A F D E E L I N G .

---

1. *Wealthy*, rijk. *farmer*, boer, pachter. *to decline*, afnemen. *to perceive*, bemerken. *to leave with*, opdragen, overlaten. *injunction*, last, bevel. *to disclose*, ontdekken, openbaren. *to communicate*, mededeelen. *treasure*, schat. *to conceal*, verbergen. *harvest*, oogst. *search*, opsporing. *to mention*, melden. *vigour*, kracht, sterkte. *alacrity*, levendigheid, vlugheid. *to turn up*, omspitten. *consequence*, gevolg. *pursuit*, poging. *to yield*, opleveren, geven. *plentiful*, overvloedig. *crop*, oogst. *to settle an account*, eene rekening opmaken. *to compute*, berekenen. *to lay a wager*, wedden.

2. *To style*, noemen, heeten. *appellation*, benaming. *hardly*, nauwelijks. *munificence*, grootmoedigheid. *benevolence*, weldadigheid. *accession*, komst, bestijging. *unprovided*, onverzorgd. *to draw up*, opstellen. *memorial*, gedenkschrift, smeekschrift. *to confide*, vertrouwen. *officiousness*, dienstvaardigheid. *courtier*, hoveling. *suit*, verzoek, bede. *to confine*, kluisteren, binden. *pressure*, nood, lijden. *anxiety of mind*, zielenangst. *suburb*, voorstad. *to indulge*, dragen. *grief*, smart. *to implore*, smeeken. *Providence*, de Voorzienigheid.

*thought*, gedachte. *scheme*, plan. *to administer*, te voorzien. *relief*, onderstand. *emotion*, ontroering. *attendants*, gevolg. *to enquire*, vragen. *suspicion*, vermoeden. *to dismiss*, wegzenden. *to suffer*, dulden. *notice*, opmerking. *fair maiden*, schoon meisje. *compassion*, medelijden. *to prompt*, ingeven, aansporen. *to relieve*, helpen, ondersteunen. *want*, gebrek. *disease*, ziekte. *pay*, loon, inkomen. *to bequath*, nalaten. *to interrupt*, in de rede vallen. *pretension*, aanspraak. *distress*, ellende. *diffidence*, wantrouwen. *pledge*, onderpand, bewijs. *to pour forth*, uitspreken. *beyond*, buiten. *reach*, bereik. *to relate*, verhalen. *invalid*, zieke. *coldly*, koel. *filial*, kinderlijke. *to tend*, strekken. *wretchedness*, jammer, ellende. *least*, minste. *to touch*, aanraken. *appointed*, bepaalde. *to repair*, verschijnen. *pale*, bleek. *snare*, strik, valstrik. *exchequer*, schatkist. *quarter-day*, betaaldag. *pay*, salaris, traktement.

3. *To fall ill*, ziek worden. *zeal*, ijver. *departure*, vertrek. *to endeavour*, trachten. *proposal*, aanbod. *affluence*, overvloed, rijkdom. *to testify*, betuigen. *whether*, of. *entrance*, ingang. *to inclose*, insluiten, bevatten. *bowels*, ingewanden. *subterraneous vault*, onderaardsch gewelf. *to depend upon*, zich verlaten op, rekenen. *perhaps*, misschien. *opportunity*, gelegenheid. *to testify*, betuigen. *to dazzle*, verblinden. *iron*, ijzeren. *candlestick*, kandelaar. *branches*, armen. *absolutely*, volstrekt. *boldly*, koen, stout. *to close*, sluiten. *mind*, geest. *to seize*, grijpen. *briars*, struiken. *to design*, plan hebben. *to quit*, verlaten. *cavern*, hol. *to enquire*, vragen.

4. blz. 90. *Lustre*, glans. *amazement*, verwondering. *to vanish*, verdwijnen. *to reproach*, verwijten. *to reflect upon one's self*, nadenken over. *to restore*, wedergeven. *to appear*, verschijnen. *thrown*, toegeworpen. *asper*, kleine turksche munt, ongeveer één cent. *further*, verder. *trace*, spoor. *to efface*, uitwischen. *to draw*, trekken. *residence*, verblijf. *to direct*, wijzen. *embarrassment*, verlegenheid. *to expect*, verwachten. *wretch*, ellendeling. *to impose upon*, bedriegen. *inmost*, binnenste. *real value*, wezenlijke waarde. *blow*, slag. *cane*, rotting. *to convert*, veranderen. *heap*, hoop. *motive*, beweeggrond. *immense*, onmetelijk. *to gratify*, bevredigen. *insatiable*, onverzadelijk. *to pierce*, doorboren. *to load*, overladen. *caress*, iefkoning. *frightful*, vreeselijk, schrikkelijk. *gate*, poort. *slave*, slaaf. *camel*, kameel. *passion*, hartstogt.

5. blz. 92. *Probity*, eerlijkheid. *folly*, dwaasheid. *jewels*, juweel. *to furnish*, voorzien. *wrong*, ongelijk, onregt. *hid*, verbergde. *to allow*, toestaan. *to hire*, huren. *witness*, getuige. *obstacle*, hindernis.

*scarce*, naauwelijks. *to feed his eyes*, zijne oogen wijden. *opulence*, rijkdom. *strength*, kracht. *law*, wet. *talisman*, toovermiddel. *instead*, in plaats. *beneath*, onder. *club*, knuppel. *to beat*, slaan. *unmercifully*, onbarmhartig. *ambition*, eerezucht. *audacious*, vermetel.

6. blz. 93. Nabijheid, *vicinity*. scheepstimmerman, *shipwright*. windmolen, *wind-mill*. minder, *less*. zaag, *saw*. bijdragen, *to add*. rijkdom, *wealth*. bloei, *prosperity*. scheepstimmerwerf, *dock*, *wharf*. haven, *harbour*. voornaamste, *principal*. begrensd, *bordered*. kanaal, *canal*. waarover, *over which*. toegang, *approach*. eenvoudig, *simple*. medgezellen, *fellow-labourers*. ontdekken, *to discover*. overeenkomstig, *suitable*. op dezelfde gemeenzame wijze, *on the same terms of familiarity*. te voren, *before*. woonde, *resided*. bewaard, *preserved*. kroonprinses, *princess of Orange*. toenmalige, *then reigning, at that time*. koningin-weduwe, *queen dowager*. gekocht, *purchased*. steenen gebouw, *brick building*. oprigten .... om, *to erect .... over*. beschadiging, *injure*. bevrijden, *to preserve from*. eikenhouten tafel, *oak-table*. bedstede, *recess*. vreemdeling, *stranger*. schrijven, *to insert*. naamteekening, *signature*. opschrift, *tablet*. wordt dus vertaald, *may be thus translated*. merkwaardigheid, *curiosity*.

7. blz. 95. Herberg, *inn*. reiziger, *traveller*. aantreffen, *to find*. draagt, *has*. ten gemakke, *for the convenience*. verlangen, *to choose*. loof, *foliage*. ledig, *empty*. echter, *however*. voorzien, *to supply*. gebruik maken, *to profit*. verzamelde menigte, *crowd*. Evangelie, *gospel*. verkondigen, *to preach, announce*. begeeren, *to please*. vertrokken, *gone*. apen, *monkeys*.

8. blz. 95. Groeit, *grows*. altijd, *ever*. hoogte, *height*. bedraagt zelden meer dan, *is seldom allowed to exceed*. ruw, *rough*. schors, *bark*. witachtig, *whitish*. afvalt, *dies*. kers, *cherry*. boon, *bean*. gebruikt wordt, *is in use*. inzameling, *crop*. zeer gewoon, *quite common*. denzelfde, *same*. oogstmaand, *harvest month*. vaderland, *native country*.

9. blz. 96. Vorstin, *princess*. opwekken, *awaken*. medelijden, *sympathie*. minste aanspraak, *least pretension*. markies, *marquess*. uitmunten, *to excel*. vloeiend, *coulant*, *easy*. grieksch, *greek*. arabisch, *arabic*. hebreuwsch, *hebrew*. leermeester, *preceptor*. later, *afterwards*. listig, *craftily*. buiten sluiten, *to set aside in*. opvolging, *succession*. ten gunste, *in favour*. tot na den dood, *till the departure*. edellieden, *noblemen*. een eerbied bewezen, *treated with the respect*. verschuldigd, *due*. ten laatste, *at length*. verdedigen, *to advocate*. regt, *claim*. overleden, *late*. meerder ijver, *greater readi-*



ness. bloedverwanten, *relatives*. besteeg, *ascended*. afzonderlijke, *separate*. krooning, *coronation*. gedroeg zich, *behaved*. biechtvader, *confessor*. overhalen, *to persuade*. met veel ijver, *diligently*. uitvoerig, *ample, large*. een laatst vaarwel toeroepen, *to bid a last farewell*. standvastig, *steadfastly*. geschokt, *overwhelmed with*. niet in staat, *unfitted*. te ontmoet zien, *to meet*. schriftelijk, *by writing, written*. zalige, *blessed*. eindeloos geluk, *infinite felicity*. voltrekking van het doodvonnis, *execution*. onderging de doodstraf, *suffered*. schavot, *scaffold*. onderwerping, *resignation*. zij rigtte eene toespraak, *she said*. omstanders, *spectators*. aanbevelen, *to commend*. blok, *block*. bijl, *axe*. slagtoffer, *victim*.

#### VIERDE AFDEELING.

1. blz. 99. *Wan*, betrokken. *fretful*, gemelijk, knorrig. *dull*, traag, verdrietig. *spirits*, levenslust. *fancy*, grillig.

2. blz. 100. *Native*, natuurlijke. *century*, eeuw. *fragrance*, geur. *consideration*, aanzien. *lover*, liefhebber. *madness*, dolheid, razernij. *aptly*, met regt. *explanation*, verklaring. *parallels*, gelijken. *to rage*, woeden. *rose*, stegen. *to enrich*, verrijken. *root*, wortel, bol. *to produce*, verschaffen. *hog*, varken. *commodities*, goederen, koopwaren. *flowerfancier*, bloemenliefhebber. *into the bargain*, op den koop toe. *heir*, erfgenaam. *to barter away*, verruilen. *to embark in the trade*, deelnemen in den handel. *chimney-sweeper*, schoorsteenveger. *rag-man*, lompenzoeker. *sailor*, matroos. *herring*, haring. *villain*, schurk. *the expense*, de kosten. *increase*, vermeerdering. *tavern*, herberg. *ale-house*, bierhuis. *witness*, getuige. *gravity*, ernst. *entertainment*, gastmaal. *dealing*, handel. *traffic*, handel. *to supply*, verschaffen. *to conclude*, sluiten. *rarity*, zeldzaamheid. *to bestow*, besteden. *kind of jobbing*, manier van spekuleren, speculatie. *expiration*, einde, verloop. *agreed upon*, overeengekomen. *cash*, klinke munt. *say*, te weten. *agreement*, overeenkomst. *stocks*, effecten. *to refer*, verwijzen. *to participate*, deelnemen. *game of chance*, kansspel, *to derive*, afkomen, afleiden. *fictitious*, valsch, ijdel. *gamester*,

speler. *cupidity*, lust, begeerlijkheid. *dupe*, bedrogene. *to harbour*, drijven. *frugality*, spaarzaamheid. *to squander*, verkwisten. *wealth*, rijkdom. *to relinquish*, opgeven, laten varen. *risk*, gevaar, kans. *utter*, geheel en al. *hence*, hieruit. *squabble*, twist. *law-suit*, regts-geding. *tribunal*, gerechtshof. *complicated*, verward. *to abate*, verlagen. *indolence*, zorgeloosheid. *reverse*, verandering. *penury*, gebrek, armoede.

3. blz. 105. *Ant*, mier. *toil*, moeijelijk werk. *glee*, lust, vreugde. *soil*, grond. *borne*, aangevoerd. *snug*, wel ingerigt. *fit*, geschikt.

4. blz. 105. *Closely*, ijverig, naauwkeurig. *charge of maintaining*, kosten van onderhoud. *was bound apprentice*, in de leer gedaan. *surgeon*, wond-arts, heelmeeester. *navigation*, zeevaart. *to fancy*, lust hebben, zich inbeelden. *to expire*, verstrijken. *addition*, vermeerdering. *prosperous*, voorspoedig. *to steer*, wenden. *crew*, bemanning. *hazy*, nevelig, mistig. *to split*, stranden, schipbreuk lijden. *shift*, moeite. *mercy*, willekeur. *waves*, golven. *squall*, rukwind. *to drop*, vallen. *to stir*, zich bewegen. *tied*, vastgebonden. *chin*, kin. *inch*, duim. *arrow*, pijl. *quiver*, pijlkoker. *to roar*, brullen, schreeuwen. *to venture*, wagen. *to struggle*, worstelen. *to wrench*, verscheuren. *peg*, pin. *string*, koord. *to release*, bevrijden. *to stab*, treffen. *buff*, buffelleder. *waist-coat*, vest. *stage*, stallaadje.

blz. 108. *Train*, sleep. *oration*, redevoering. *threatening*, bedreiging. *basket*, mand, korf. *leg*, bout. *loin*, nier. *shaped*, gevormd, van gedaante. *lark*, leeuwerik. *loaves*, brooden. *big*, dik. *bullet*, kogel. *bulk*, grootte. *to fling up*, in de hoogte werpen. *hogshead*, okshoofd. *draught*, terug. *to despatch*, met spoed verzenden. *intrepidity*, onversaagdheid. *deminutive*, kleine.

blz. 109. *Prodigious*, verbazend. *to produce*, te voorschijn brengen, toonen. *credential*, volmagt. *anger*, toorn. *metropolis*, hoofdstad. *to convey*, geleiden, brengen. *disapprobation*, afkeuring. *cheerful countenances*, vriendelijke gebaren. *to relax*, slap worden, verslappen. *to rub*, wrijven. *ointment*, zalf, *engine*, machine. *frame*, gebouw. *wheel*, wiel. *vehicle*, voertuig. *pole*, paal. *rope*, touw. *packthread*, paktouw. *bandages*, windsels. *leg*, been. *pulley*, rol.

blz. 110. *To infuse*, ingieten. *purposely*, opzettelijk. *to yoke*, aanspannen. *to drag*, trekken. *torch*, fakkel. *on account*, wegens. *padlock*, hangslot. *turret*, torentje. *vast*, menigte, vele. *errand*, berigt, doel. *square*, vierkant. *raree-shew*, rarekiek.

blz. 111. *Minutely*, bijzonder, naauwkeurig. *butler*, slager. *to prevent*, verhinderen. *impertinence*, onbeschaamdheid. *rabble*, gemeen

volk. *to devour*, verslinden. *victual*, levensmiddelen. *to push*, drijven. *to squall*, schreeuwen. *clemency*, goedheid. *pavement*, vloer, steenen. *smooth*, glad. *sown*, genaaid. *barely*, bloot, kaal, naauw. *sheet*, laken. *blanket*, wollen deken. *coverlid*, deken, tapijt.

blz. 112. *Council*, raadsvergadering. *to apprehend*, vreezen. *diet*, onderhoud. *expensive*, duur. *famine*, hongersnood. *poisoned*, vergiftigde. *stench*, stank. *carcase*, lijk. *plague*, pest. *to issue orders*, bevel geven. *beaves*, ossen. *treasure beard*, schatkist, schatbewaarder. *a suit of clothes*, pak kleederen. *attended*, waren belast. *huge*, groot. *to grant*, verleenen, bewilligen.

blz. 113. *Inventory*, inventaris, lijst. *coarse*, grof. *chest*, kistje. *midleg*, tot midden aan de beenen. *dust*, stof. *to sneeze*, niezen. *row*, rei. *hollow*, hol. *heavy*, zwaar. *to lift*, optillen. *to share*, scheren. *globe*, bol, kogel. *to worship*, aanbidden, vereeren. *fob*, zak. *yellow*, geel.

blz. 114. *Belt*, gordel. *skin*, vel, huid. *bag*, buidel, zak. *cell*, cel. *grain*, korrel. *scimitar*, zwaard, degen. *scabbard*, schede. *reflection*, terugkaatsing. *beholder*, toeschouwer. *pouch*, zak. *yeomen*, krijgslieden. *draymen*, kruijers, slepers. *barrel*, vat. *minute hand*, minuutwijzer. *razor*, scheermes. *store*, pakhuis. *apprehensive*, bevreesd.

blz. 115. *To play at hide and seek*, schuilwinkeltje spelen. *preliminaries*, voorwaarden. *mutual*, wederzijdsch. *oath*, eed. *to perform*, nakomen. *licence*, vrijheid, verlof. *to confine*, bepalen. *high road*, groote weg, straatweg. *meadow*, weide. *to trample*, trappen, treden. *express*, renbode, koerier. *despatch*, haast. *ally*, bondgenoot. *building*, gebouw. *ratification*, bekrachtiging. *allowance*, kostgeld, bepaald deel. *support*, onderhoud. *unlocked*, ontsloten. *to prostrate*, knielen.

blz. 116. *To confer upon*, verleenen. *tower*, toren. *strode*, van *to stride*, stappen. *waist-coat*, vest. *skirt*, pand. *to damage*, beschadigen. *eaves*, goot. *garret*, dakkamer. *story*, verdieping. *shop*, winkel. *to war*, oorlog voeren. *harbour*, haven. *depth*, diepte.

blz. 117. *Cable*, touw. *bar*, staaf. *knitting needle*, breinaald. *shore*, oever. *tacle*, takel. *prow*, voorstevan. *men of war*, oorlogschepen. *coast*, kust. *issue*, uitslag. *to discern*, onderscheiden. *hostile*, vijandig. *shallow*, ondiep. *encomiums*, lofrede. *created*, benoemd.

blz. 118. *To reduce*, veranderen. *to protest*, plegtig verklaren. *brave*, dapper. *dislike*, misnoegen. *hatred*, haat. *intrigue*, list, geheime kunstgreep. *destruction*, ondergang. *seizure*, bemagtiging. *treaty*, verdrag. *accordingly*, dien ten gevolge. *to wait*, opwachting

maken. *intercourse*, gesprek, zamenkomst. *disaffection*, tegenzin. *suspicion*, verdenking. *to entreat*, verzoeken. *to repair*, verschijnen. *maid of honour*, eeredame. *to stifle*, verstikken. *flap*, pand. *to quench*, uitblusschen. *to operate*, werken. *to void*, ledigen.

blz. 119. *Size*, grootte. *beetle*, tor. *and so on*, en zoo voort. *cabbage*, kool. *aslant*, scheef, schuins. *corner*, hoek. *waiter*, bediende. *sirloin*, lendestuk. *turkey*, kalkoen. *scanty*, schraal. *advisable*, raadzaam. *to dismiss*, ontslaan.

blz. 120. *To call at one's house*, iemand bezoeken. *instigation*, aanhitsing. *chamberlain*, kamerheer. *great justiciary*, opperreger. *impeachment*, aanklagt. *treason*, verraad. *in defiance*, in weerwil. *pretence*, voorwendsel. *maliciously*, boosaardig. *traitorously*, verraderlijk. *verbal*, mondeling. *to abet*, opstoken, helpen. *to stand to trial*, voor het gerecht verschijnen. *to subdue*, onderwerpen. *to pelt*, werpen. *heaved anchor*, ligtte het anker. *to strip*, uitkleeden.

blz. 121. *Port*, haven. *reception*, ontvangst. *suitable*, overeenkomstig. *league*, mijl. *overturned*, omgekeerd. *tide*, getij. *ashore*, strandwaarts. *envoy*, gezantschap. *lenity*, goedheid, zachtheid. *culprit*, misdadiger. *loss*, verlies. *incumbrance*, last.

blz. 122. *To quilt together*, aan elkander naaijen. *to twist*, draaijen. *oar*, roer. *tallow*, vet, talk. *to greas*, met vet besmeren. *full-length*, ten voete uit. *carcase*, lijk. *bull*, stier. *alive*, levend. *ewe*, ooi. *to equip*, uitrusten. *to descry*, ontdekken. *lee-side*, lijzijde. *to steer*, wenden. *antient*, vlag. *live-stock*, levensvoorraad. *cargo*, lading. *merchantman*, koopvaardijship. *wit*, verstand. *veracity*, waarheid. *remainder*, rest. *downs*, duinen (zandheuveld vooral aan de kust van Kent).

7. blz. 123. *Hark*, hoor. *sullen*, grommig, boos. *foaming*, schuimende. *to brave*, trotseren. *yonder*, gindsch. *speck*, vlekje. *billows tost*, slingering, spel der baren. *inmates' cry*, geroep, stem des harten. *sad*, treurig. *to defy*, trotseren, uitdagen. *power*, magt.

8. blz. 124. *Burden*, last. *sagacity*, schranderheid. *playful*, speelziek. *gambol*, kromme, snaaksche sprong. *frolic*, dartelheid. *exuberance*, overmaat. *antic*, kluchten. *instance*, voorbeeld. *occured*, viel voor. *outskirts*, omstreken. *tremendous*, vreesselijk. *nocturnal*, nachtelijk. *ditch*, sloot. *trench*, gracht. *to conjecture*, vermoeden, begrijpen. *to contrive*, bewerkstelligen. *marvel*, wonder. *edge*, rand. *to indent*, indrukken, insnijden. *failure*, mislukking. *to hoist*, hijschen.

9. blz. 125. *Clod*, aardkluit. *showers*, regenbuijen. *sore*, zeer.

*sultry*, warme, brandende. *wan*, betrokken. *joint*, lid. *cart*, kar. *rogue*, schelm. *forgery*, vervalsching.

blz. 126. *To cudgell*, met een knuppel slaan. *o'er and o'er*, om en om. *darksome*, duister. *woe*, leed, kommer. *to toss*, slingeren. *to waste*, verteren. *scorching*, verschroeijende. *marrow*, merg. *to crush*, verbrijzelen, vermalen. *tho'*, hoewel. *to toast*, eene gezondheid instellen. *posterity*, nakomelingschap. *ne'er (never)*, nooit.

10. blz. 127. *Story*, geschiedenis. *to haress*, kwellen. *warlike*, oorlogzuchtig. *heathen*, heiden. *to slaughter*, slagten. *cowardly*, laf. *spoil*, buit. *mischief*, onheil.

blz. 128. *To levy*, ligten, aanwerven. *relation*, bloedverwant. *thane*, landvoogd. *earl*, graaf. *to defeat*, verslaan. *witch*, heks, toovenaarster. *now-a-days*, heden ten dage. *gipsy*, zwervende heiden. *to tempt*, verzoeken. *to impose upon*, bedriegen.

blz. 129. *Moor*, moeras. *heath*, heide. *hail*, heil. *messenger*, bode. *inheritance*, erfenis. *office*, post, ambt.

blz. 130. *Intrusted*, vertrouwd. *to bestow*, verleenen. *castle*, kasteel. *kinsman*, bloedverwant. *retinue*, gevolg. *in case*, in geval. *watchmen*, wachters.

blz. 131. *Drugs*, droppels. *weary*, vermoeid, *sentinel*, schildwacht. *dirk*, dolk. *to stab*, steken. *effectually*, met zulk een goed gevolg. *groan*, zucht. *dagger*, dolk. *to daub*, besmeren. *murder*, moord. *hall*, zaal.

blz. 132. *To pretend*, voorgeven. *slain*, gedood. *to reflect*, na te denken. *to conspire*, zamenzweeren. *in order*, om. *ruffian*, moordenaar. *escape*, vlugt, ontsnapping.

blz. 133. *Perplexity*, verslagenheid. *cunning*, listig. *until*, tenzij. *hill*, heuvel. *betwixt*, tusschen. *assault*, aanval, bestorming. *to fortify*, versterken. *to drag*, slepen. *steep*, steil.

blz. 134. *Materials*, bouwstoffen. *probably*, waarschijnlijk. *private hatred*, bijzondere haat. *opportunity*, gelegenheid. *to put to death*, ter dood brengen. *guard*, hoede. *to summon*, oproepen. *none*, geen, niemand. *to strengthen*, versterken. *to trudge*, zwoegen, met moeite arbeiden. *ascent*, bestijging. *burden*, vracht. *tired*, vermoeid. *unfit*, ongeschikt. *cattle*, vee.

blz. 135. *Yoke*, juk. *mischief*, grief, smart, leed. *to snatch up*, snel opnemen. *loaf of bread*, stuk brood. *called for*, vroeg naar. *to attend*, volgen. *on horseback*, te paard. *to carry*, dragen. *ferry*, veer. *loaf*, brood. *faster*, harder. *to shut*, sluiten. *gate*, poort. *draw-bridge*, ophaalbrug.

blz. 136. *Caused . . . to be fitted*, liet . . . uitrusten. *husband*, echtgenoot. *surrender*, overgeven. *delay*, uitstel, uitvlugt. *safely*, in veiligheid. *threat*, bedreiging. *yon*, ginds. *yonder*, daar, in de verte. *to pull down*, nederstorten. *to incense*, verbitterd, vertoornd zijn. *to attempt*, beproeven. *ruins*, puinhoopen. *confessor*, belijder. *to recover*, terug krijgen. *petition*, verzoek.

blz. 137. *Tired*, wars. *warrior*, krijgsman. *he shut*, hij sloot. *to boast*, pralen. *encamped*, gelegerd. *bough*, tak. *was moving*, in aantogt was. *liar*, leugenaar. *appearance*, schijn. *destruction*, ondergang. *too*, ook. *to be disheartened*, den moed verliezen.

blz. 138. *To recollect*, verzamelen. *bravery*, dapperen. *to sally*, een uitval doen. *in the thick*, in het digtste. *to reward*, beloonen. *vanguard*, voorhoede. *coronation*, krooning. *to create*, scheppen, in het leven roepen. *to adopt*, aannemen.

11. blz. 138. *To ponder*, overwegen, nadenken. *doleful*, treurig. *account*, naam. *to surmount*, overtreffen. *estate*, stand.

blz. 139. *Babe*, klein kind, wichtje. *mould*, vorm. *to control*, wederleggen, beperken. *chance to die*, mogten sterven. *to stay*, blijven.

blz. 140. *Quoth*, zeide. *to deal*, handelen. *ought*, iets. *strait*, regelregt.

blz. 141. *To bargain*, handelen. *ruffian*, roover. *mood*, gemoedsgesteldheid. *to slay*, dooden. *artful tale*, verzinsel. *tide*, wisseling. *merry*, vrolijk. *to prattle*, babbelen. *to work decay*, afsnijden. *to relent*, verzachten, bedaren, bewegen. *to do vow*, zweeren. *to agree*, instemmen. *to strife*, twisten.

blz. 142. *Unfrequented*, onbezocht. *to quake*, sidderen. *straitway*, regtuit. *blackberry*, braambes. *dyed*, geverwd. *darksome*, duister. *due relief*, noodigen bijstand. *burial*, begrafenis. *wrath*, toorn, wraak.

blz. 143. *Yea*, ja. *fiend*, vijand. *to haunt*, belegeren, dikwijls bezoeken. *barn*, schuur. *were fir'd*, verbrandden. *consumed*, verteerden. *barren*, dor, onvruchtbaar. *cattle*, vee. *want*, gebrek. *to pawn*, verpanden. *to mortgage*, doen belasten (verpanden). *mean*, middel. *robbery*, rooverij. *to display*, verklaren. *jail*, kerker. *executor*, uitvoerder van iemands laatsten wil. *overseer*, opzigter. *eke*, ook. *to requite*, vergelden, straffen.

12. blz. 144. *Rustling*, geritsel. *jungle*, digte bosch. *carbine*, geweer. *projection*, uitsteking, vooruitsprong. *ball*, kogel. *rest*, steun. *gun*, geweer. *hidden*, verborgen. *cap*, pet. *to peep*, turen. *cautiously*, voorzigtiglijk. *to stoop*, bukken. *creek*, beek, stroom. *emaciated*,

vermagerd. *limb*, lid. *club*, knods. *furrowed*, gegroefd. *wrinkle*, rimpel. *infirmities*, zwakheden. *stride*, groote schrede. *rough*, ruw. *sullen*, somber. *malignity*, boosaardigheid. *margin*, kant, oever. *to knock off*, openbreken. *limpet*, mossel. *muscle*, schelp. *to swallow*, verslinden. *voraciously*, gulzig. *to gather*, plukken. *leaf*, blad. *oyster*, oester.

blz. 145. *Nimbly*, vlug. *whence*, van waar. *to issue*, uitgaan. *to crawl*, kruipen. *foot-worn*, betreden, begaan. *glimpse*, blik. *blow*, slag. *to track*, volgen. *moss-grown*, met mos begroeid. *clung*, (van *to cling*), zich vastklemmen. *stays*, ladder, touwen. *alternately*, beurtelings. *to shift*, verplaatsen, voortschuiven. *to avoid*, vermijden. *to cross*, dwars overgaan. *ridge*, rei. *underwood*. kreupelhout. *pine*, den. *decomposed*, verrot, vergaan. *prostrate*, nedergeworpen. *trunk*, stam. *to strip*, berooven. *wire-grass*, grashalm, lang gras. *to proceed*, voortgaan. *to smelt*, rieken.

blz. 146. *Plantain*, plantaan. *to peel*, schillen. *to level*, ophoopen, verhoogen. *corner*, hoek. *shelter*, schaduw. *to wattle*, vlechten. *to marvel*, zich verwonderen. *taste*, smaak. *recluse*, kluisenaar. *to select*, uitkiezen. *nutmeg*, notenmuskaat. *to perfume*, welriekend maken. *excavation*, holte. *to screen*, beschermen. *bark*, schors. *graces*, gratiën. *dwelling*, woning. *palmetta-leaved*, met palmbladen bedekte. *to sparkle*, schitteren, vonkelen. *snake*, slang. *to startle*, ontstellen.

blz. 147. *To clench*, vastklemmen. *quarter-staff*, knuppel. *gaunt*, mager. *to grind*, malen, grijnzen. *brow*, wenkbrauw. *cocked*, gespannen. *stride*, schrede. *arm-pit*, oksel. *contents*, lading. *slap*, eensklaps. *to extricate*, losmaken. *convulsive*, stuiptrekkend. *comfort*, gemak. *partition*, gedeelte. *to conjecture*, vermoeden. *store*, voorraad. *to prevent*, verhoeden. *to halloo*, luid roepen (gelijk dit de jagers doen). *to anticipate*, vermoeden. *beach*, strand. *to draw nigh*, medeslepen, aanrukken. *report*, geraas, slag van een geweer. *encounter*, ontmoeting.

blz. 148. *Full-grown*, volwassen. *skeleton*, geraamte. *rare*, zeldzaam.

